

Rev. Nathaniel Turner – journal, 1836-Aug. 1846

[Page 1]

[Jottings, notes, numbers]

[Page 2]

Journal of Nathl Turner for 1836

January 3rd Laboured hard today to impress the mind of the people with the importance of Divine & Eternal things - in the morning at Macquarie Street Chapel from “Beloved I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper, and be in health ever as thy Soul prospereth” – And in the afternoon Evening spoke with considerable freedom & feeling in PrinceSs Street Chapel, but the Congregations are very discouraging – Still the people listen with attention, and I hope ere long to see the work of the Lord revive.

Saturday 9th – Have been sitting in the District all week, but in consequence of various lets we have not yet come to a close. Our sittings have been in great peace and harmony, and I hope each Brother feels more fully resolved to live entirely devoted to this great work of saving Souls – In this part of the District there is but little to encourage – Members less in number than last year, but in Van Diemen’s Land we have been favoured with considerable encouragement.

Sunday, 10th – Preached in Macquarie Street Chapel this morning from the “Canaanitish Woman” – and in the Evening in Prince Street from “If thou Lord shouldest mark iniquity, O Lord who shall stand” But my Congregations were far from being numerous, though very attentive. O when shall this barren wilderness become a fruitful field!

Wednesday 13th – This Morning our District Meeting closed and the Brethren Simpson & Schofield returned to their Honest work, leaving me very busy getting up the District Documents to ready to be forwarded to the Com-er by the first opportunity. Letters have arrived from the Brethren in the Friendly Island giving the most pleasing accounts of what the Lord is still doing amongst those interesting people.

Sunday 17th – Preached at Princes Street Morning & Evening but had not many to hear – After Evening service went up to Macquarie Street and heard Mr Octon full an hour in his Farewell Discourse – He Preaches well, but exceedingly long.

[Page 3]

Mon: 18th – Received Letters from the Com-er. this Morning of a very important character, seriously affecting this District. The Conference has Divided the District and appointed Mr Orton Chairman of Van Diemen’s Land alone – and Mr McKenny who has been many years in Ceylon is coming over as Chairman of New South Wales – And to my utter astonishment I am appointed Chairman of New Zealand. This news affected me much when I heard of it, but upon a calmer view am disposed to think it is of God, and though in some respects painful to flesh & blood I am ready to say “The will of the Lord be done.” I feel most in respect to my family, and fear the appointment will affect the Children much – several of them must have Education now or Never. In New Zealand they cannot have it, and I fear there will be serious

obstacles in the way of leaving them in this Colony – But the promise is “In all thy ways acknowledge me, and I will direct thy steps.”

How mysterious are the Movements of Providence, but they are always gracious to them that love him! and I trust myself & family, as well as the Church of God will have cause to thank the Almighty for this change.

Sat. 23rd – Have been variously engaged through the week with Bro: Orton &c. who has been preparing to leave for his station, accompanied by Bro: Simpson and his family – some of my engagements have been of a very painful nature, while others have afforded me much pleasure. Parted with the Brethren Orton & Simpson about twelve this Evening who accompanied me again on ashore after we had got their families &c. safe on Board – They have a very comfortable Ship the “Derwent”, and a very kind Captain “Cap. Riddle” and I trust by the blessing of God they will soon arrive at their destined Port – The Lord be their Pilot!

[Page 4]

Sunday 24th – Rose pretty early this Morning but found when I went down to the Cove that the Derwent had sailed and my Brethren & Families had thus taken their Departure – May the God of all grace go with them.

Preached at Macquarie Street at Eleven, but had very hard work to get on – the people dull, and my own soul shut up – Had a better time in the afternoon at Prince Street from the “Pharisee and Publican” and a better still in the Evening at Macque. Street from “For none of us liveth to himself &c.” but seriously hope the mind will be found to have been accompanied with Divine power.

Sat: 30th – Have been quite poorly most of the week through the very sultry state of the weather, and sitting too close at my writing – My chest at times has been full of pain, but thank the Lord am better, and hope to be able to preach there tomorrow and have a good day.

On Wednesday I rode to Liverpool and Preached, but had but few to hear, except the Children of Mr Coopers School who in general listened with great attention, and I hope some profit. Liverpool in point of Religion appears in a deplorable state, though somewhat improved since Mr Cooper & family arrived. He is a good Man, a Member of our Society and was a Local Preacher at home – O may the Lord make him very useful!

Thursday Evening Preached to an encouraging Congn. at Parramatta, and I trust the word was with Power to some.

Sunday 31st – A very labourious but profitable sabbath. Preached twice at Macquarie, and once at Prince Street, and was favoured with Life & Power, and doubt but some real good was effected – But I find it wearying work to Preach three times this very hot weather. Lord strengthen me!

February 1st. Monday – Visiting some of the people through the day and found it good to be so employed.

At our Misn. Prayer Meeting we had a good time. I read a Letter from Mr Tucker at Lifuka .. a most encouraging amount of the work of God indeed – the gracious influence rested upon us. O Lord revive thy work, revive thy work!

[Page 5]

Feb. 2nd – Arrived this Evening from Hobart Town our Brother & Sister Rabone and Child on their way to Tongataboo They have been favoured with health & a comfortable [indecipherable] and I doubt not but while we remain together here we

shall labor in harmony, and be blessed to the people.

Sat. 6th – Have been variously engaged with Mr Rabone since his arrival in attending to the work of the Circuit Making purchases from the Islands &c. &c. We have had good feelings in our Meetings, and I am ready to believe we are just on the eve of a blessed Revival.

Sunday 7th – A laborious but truly blessed Sabbath to my own mind, and doubt not but it was good to many. Attended the Prayer Meeting at half past six, and tho but few present there was encouraging feeling throughout the Meeting. At eleven Preached in Prince St. Chapel with good freedom and to a more encouraging Cong.n than has been wont to attend. At two o'clock accompanied by Bro: Rabone & others I took my stand out of Doors in Kent Street, in a very populous, but degraded spot and the singing soon drew some hundreds together most of whom listened with great attention while I addressed them from "Unto you is the word of this Salvation sent" – the Lord favoured me with enlargement of heart, and freedom of speech, and the word I believe was with Power to many souls. Opening the three oclock service in the Prince St. Chapel which was fuller than ever was known before – Bro Rabone preached. Having closed the service here, accompanied by many of the Congregation we went & took our stand out of Doors again in Cumberland St. about the Centre of the Rocks – a place almost as wicked as Sodom itself – got at least near five hundred were soon gathered together, and most of them behaved well and listened with attention while Mr Rabone spoke from "God so loved the world &c." – At Macqu.e St. had a good Cong.n & a good time from "The brazen Serpent" - and at the Sacrament the Lord was imminently nigh.- Retired to rest weary enough.

[Page 6]

Sat. 13th – Nothing of moment has occurred during the week – Most of my time has been occupied in attending to the various concerns of the Mission – Purchasing and packing up various articles for New Zealand – We have been favoured with good feeling in most of the means during the week but tonight we had one soul set at liberty – O for a glorious shower!

Sunday, 14th – A profitable Sabbath to my own soul. The Lord manifests himself to the Souls of his people while I addressed them in the Morning at Macquarie Street from "For the Lord God is a Sun and Shield &c." and at three in Princes Street I had a good time in speaking to a crowded Congregation from "There be many that say who will shew us any good &c. &c." – Afterwards Preached upon the Rocks in the open air to at least four or five hundred people most of whom listened with attention, and I hope not in vain – Endeavoured to speak very plainly to them from "Turn ye, turn ye for why will ye die? &c." Heard Mr Rabone out of Doors at two oclock from the value of the Soul, and again in the Evening at Macquarie Street from "Seek ye the Lord while He may be found &c." A very good and profitable Sermon, O Lord revive thy work!

[Maybe] Sunday 6th This morning Mr and Mrs Wellard arrived from Hobart Town on their way to join the Tonga Mission – By them have received Letters from Bro: Octon, informing me of the arrival of the arrival of Mr Mackenny & five other Brethren with their wives (save one single) at Ht Town. Part of them for his Colony & the other for the Islands. Through them have received letters from the Comer. respecting New Zealand – and my instructions as to what line the Com.er intends me to pursue when I get down there. Poor White is to go home, and I fear in Disgrace – Not a few I fear will be my difficulties respecting him – But the Lord is Allsufficient.

[Page 7]

Preached three times today with tolerable freedom Macquarie Street in the Morning, Out of Door in Kent Street at two, and at three in Prince Street Chapel – Many attended and listened with attention – I cannot but hope the Lord is about to pour out his spirit upon us.

Sat. 20th – Since the last entry into my journal I have had much to occupy my attention and people my Mind – Never in my life was I so much a Man of business as during this period in procuring supplies for the Tonga & New Zealand Brethren, as well as making arrangement for my own removal to the place of my Destination – Although my successor has not arrived I have judged it proper to take my passage in the Patriot a suitable vessel preparing to go down to Hakianga for a Cargo of Timber – and if all be well we expect to embark in less than a fortnight – O that I may be guided in all my ways aright! Nothing of importance has taken place in the society, but hope there is a growing improvement, and some few are casting in their lot amongst us.

Sunday, 27th – A profitable Sabbath to my mind – Had good freedom in Preaching, especially out of Doors on the Rocks. many attended and listened as those who felt they had an interest in what was spoken. My subject was Christ's Lamentation over Jerusalem, which affects my own mind much, and I trust was a blessing to the people.

Sunday, April 3rd – Very poorly in Body (and have been so all the past week) but ventured to preach in the Evening it being the last opportunity I expect to have in this Colony. While going up to the Chapel had the pleasure of seeing the Bencoolen sail up the Cove with our Missionaries on board. Five out of the six Brethren came up to Chapel while I was preaching and my heart was gladdened to see them.

[Page 8]

Had pretty good freedom in speaking from "Likewise I say unto you there is joy in heaven &c. &c." – and afterwards we had a good time at the Sacrament at which two of the new Brethren assisted. Was introduced to all the new Brethren and their wives. I pray God they may be found men properly fitted for their work!

Wednesday, 6th – Have spent these three days with the new Brethren and in preparation for bidding this land Adieu. Suffered much from spasmodic affection in my Chest nearly all day, (a complaint from which I have suffered much of late) nevertheless through the persuasion of friends I ventured to give the people a farewell address at Macquarie Street Chapel this Evening. The Congregation was very good, and the interest excited appeared to be considerable while I addressed them from "Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a Crown of life". O that I may meet these my new Brethren & Sisters, with all my friends in that happy world above!

Friday, 8th – This morning we bade adieu to all our friends, and about Eleven embarked on board the Patriot Captain Shorter bound direct for our destination Hokianga, New Zealand. The Brethren McKenny, Rabone & Draper accompanied us on Board – and shortly after we weighed anchor and stood out for sea, but in entering the Heads found the wind too light & unfavourable to take us out. To our great regret therefore we had to put back, and again to cast anchor in Watson's Bay until the wind should become favourable.

Sunday, 10th – At five A.M. again weighed anchor and by seven a gentle breeze had carried us safely through the Heads into the wide ocean. The wind however would not allow us to lie our direct course. I was however thankful for a gentle breeze and smooth sea on the outset of our voyage, which prevented much sickness.

[Page 9]

At Eleven A.M. we had public service on the Quarter Deck. The Captain & Mates attended and some of the Seamen and all appeared attentive while I spoke from “The Land preserveth all them that love him, but all the wicked will he destroy”. We spent the remainder of the day as comfortably as could be expected in our circumstances.

Wed: 13th. Hitherto the wind has been very unfavourable but the sea calm and smooth, and all comfortable on board.

Sunday, 17th – Yesterday we had a favourable change of wind so that we are now sailing direct for our Port about five miles an hour; but it will be some time ere we can make it, the unfavourable winds having driven us full six degrees South of our Port.

Preached this morning on the Quarter deck with pretty good freedom from “And as Moses lifted up the Serpent, etc”. All were attentive and I hope the word was not in vain. The day had been very favourable, and we have had as agreeable a Sabbath as most I ever spent on ship board.

Monday, 18th – Finished reading the Memoirs of the late William Carvosso of Cornwall sent me by my old friend and Correspondent his Son Benjamin, the Editor and I trust the reading of it has made lasting impressions of good upon my mind. Such a man for strong, simple and operative faith, I do not recollect to have read of before, and oh what a glorious exit! May my last end be like his! The little work I hope will be made a blessing unto many.

Saturday, 23rd – Yesterday we came in sight of our desired Port and expected soon to enter but the wind was unfavourable, and today we have again been beaten off by an unfavourable gale. When near the Heads a small Schooner hove in sight, and bore down upon us, and to my surprise and pleasure Mr. White was in her. A boat was lowered and he came on board and appeared glad to see us.

[Page 10]

He was bound for the Waikato District to visit the Brethren there who had sent for him but he at once abandoned his project and secured the vessel back he remaining on board with us hoping we should shortly enter the port but it immediately came to blows and increased until it soon became an alarming gale and continued all night and most of -

Sunday, 24th – So that we could not have any service save in family devotions. It was a mercy indeed that the wind blew from the point it did or we must have been driven on shore. Increasingly evening [indecipherable] fell and the troubled ocean became more calm but the gale had driven us at least forty Miles to the Southward & westward of our Point and through light & contrary winds we did not make it again until

Wednesday, 27 – When Martin the Pilot came on Board about three P.M. and after making several [indecipherable] between the Heads and Anchored about

[indecipherable] miles up the River a little before dark. My mind felt truly grateful to [indecipherable] Deliver from this [indecipherable] us so far in safety towards our resting place. I do not like the Sea.

Thursday, 28th – A breeze springing up about 1 PM we weighed anchor and sailed [indecipherable] up the noble River, with the scenery of which I was most delighted, and in about four hours came to an Anchor about two miles [indecipherable] station; and in about an hour afterwards got all my family up to the Mission Premises where we met with a most

[Page 11]

[indecipherable] favourable reception from Rev. & Sister White & also from Rev. & Sister Gibb. Rev. White had kindly [indecipherable] but of his active [indecipherable] to make easier for us. In no place did I ever meet with a more favourable reception.

Sat: 30th – Have been very busy making, arranging Premises for and getting part of our things on Shore. The weather has been wet & unfavourable, and for mud and dirt I never was in such a place in my life and never I think did men choose a more uneven ugly place in this world for a Mission establishment in this world than [indecipherable]. It has however the great advantage of being central to various tribes in the different branches of the River. A goodly number have [indecipherable] to manifest a concern for Sacred things, [indecipherable] attend [indecipherable] Public.... Life. But I shall be able to judge of their state better by & bye. O may the gracious Lord pour out his Spirit upon me and make my coming here a great blessing.

Sunday, May 1st – A goodly number attended the native worship this Morning, I think about two hundred and their order, attention and apparent devotion was truly pleasing, especially to me contrasting their former disorderly and very rude conduct in general compared with their present behaviour. Their responses in the Church service which have been translated were truly pleasing. But what delighted me the most was a Sermon preached by Timothy a Native youth on the parable of the Sower. The substance of which I perfectly understood, and it was really scriptural, Spiritual, and to the point, and well calculated to inform the Judgement, & affect the heart

[Page 12]

Mr. White spoke afterwards, he appeared pretty fluent in the language, but his speaking to me was very inferior to the Native youth's. In the afternoon, I preached in English to the Europeans, better than twenty of whom were present, including our own families, and also a good many Natives. Did not feel very well.

Native service again in the Evening, when Mr. Woon addressed the people with considerable freedom, fluency, and I hope effect. His proficiency in the Native language surpasses what I had expected. I hope the Lord will make him very useful. Felt a good deal myself in not being able to speak to them at all, but encouraged the hope of being able to do so in a very short time.

Tuesday, 3rd – Have been very busy in getting the remainder of our goods from the vessel, unpacking etc. etc – but am thankful that that all have come safe. Felt much this Morning at receiving a Letter from Bro. White, tendering his resignation as a Missionary, and endeavoured to persuade him from his purpose for the sake of the cause of God until the unhappy affair in circulation against him had

been investigated. But his mind feels very sour against the Committee.

Wednesday, 4th – Received a note from Mr. White tendering his services to the Mission as a Carpenter but from this I persuaded him, and after more mature reflection he sent Mr. Woon down to request me to return his Letter of resignation which I did willingly, believing it would be better for the cause of God for him as a Missionary to meet his enemies face to face.

[Page 13]

May

Friday, 6th – Retired to rest last Evening very weary with the labour of unpacking etc. etc. and also very poorly with sore throat. Between eleven and twelve were somewhat alarmed by the natives calling out that there was a white man come with a white woman whom he had brought from the British Resident to be sheltered by us from threatened Destruction. After a few minutes one of the native domestics brought me a Letter in from him requesting me to take her for the under my protection as her life was in danger, but before I was able to put on my Cloaths, Mr. White came down, and in the most outrageous manner drove them from the premises using language unbecoming a man, much more the character of a Christian & a Minister.

After Prayer & Breakfast I took Messrs. Woon and Butler with me to see Mr. White and to remonstrate with him about his conduct last Evening, but he would scarce hear me speak, and was ready to have treated me almost as bad as poor Batts last Evening, but the Lord enabled me to bear patiently. I informed him however of my intention to go and see Cap. McDonald the Resident and Mr. Batts whom he treated so ill last night but that such conduct might not be misconstrued or misrepresented I prevailed upon Mr. Francis White (Mr. White's Brother) and Mr. Woon to go with me. We were received by the Resident etc. with kindness and heard with politeness. I considered it my duty to apologize for the treatment his Messenger met with last Evening and to shew them that I was clear of blame in the affair, this was at once admitted. At the same time I opined Mr. McDonald of my intention to

[Page 14]

call upon him to prove the charges he has brought against Mr. White which he says he is ready to do.

Since our return Mr. White has been prevailed upon to make an apology to Mr. Batts for his conduct towards him last Evening.

Held our first English Prayer Meeting this Evening at Mr. Woon's and we had a melting time. O how good the Lord is to us! Blessed has his Name for his loving kindness to me a Creature so unworthy!

Sunday, 8th – Profitable day to my soul. The native service was well attended, the Chapel was crowded to excess, and Mr. White spoke to them with great freedom and feeling – all were deeply attentive. I read the morning service, but did not get on well. In the afternoon Preached in English with good freedom from "Jabez calling upon the God of Israel etc."

In the Evening we had a Native Lovefeast, and it was to me a very interesting time. From two to three Hundred at least were present and near Seventy spoke some of them in a very appropriate and affecting manner, but others were rather wild & wide of the mark; it was far beyond what I expected to see in New Zealand. Contrasting the present state of things with what existed where we were driven out with the loss of all but life we could but exclaim "What hath God wrought"! To him alone be honor & Praise ascribed!

Monday 9th – Our minds were much distressed this morning on hearing that one of the sailors from our vessel was drowned and what renders more so to us is he was Brother to our Missionary Rev. Wallis, and had come down here on purpose to see his Brother whom he had not seen for some years: but alas! He has past the bounds of time and will not see his Brother until they meet in the world of Spirits. How uncertain is human life! The poor steward of our vessel has likewise got seriously injured – his thigh & jaw bones broken by the fall of a Log upon him.

[Page 15]

Tuesday, 10th – Chartered the Brig. Martha, Cap. Crooks to fetch the Brethren Whitely & Wallis with their families from the southwards to have them stationed nearer to this place. This is a painful business, but it is in accordance with the Institutions of the Committee. The expense will be great besides the abandonment of Stations of great promise.

Friday, 13th – Accompanied by Mr. Woon I went down to the Heads yesterday to select a spot for a new Mission Station. Spent the night at Cap. Young's, a settlement where we are likely to form our new Station. And this morning accompanied by him we visited all the neighbourhood and finally determined upon a spot and purchased the land from Maitera the principal Chief. The land is good and the site I think will be found excellent. We earnestly sought direction from on high, and I trust it will be seen that in this selection we were guided from on high.

Sunday, 15th – Our Native Congregations were small today, principally we suppose from the people being so busy getting up their Kumeras that they cannot spare to lose two days Saturday & Monday which many are obliged to do who come from a considerable distance. Mr. Shephard of the Church Missionary who came over here yesterday conducted the Native service and Preached to them an excellent Sermon on the New Birth. He speaks the language well. In the afternoon we had a very profitable English service. My own soul was quickened & comforted while addressing about twenty Europeans from "Godliness is profitable unto all things, etc."

Monday, 15th – Prepared to set off early this Morning for the Dayos Islands but while preparing the Natives came to inform me that the Body of poor Wallis was found – and to our great surprise found close to our wharf although Drowned at least two miles lower down the River with a very strong tide setting downwards at the time he was drowned. How to account for

[Page 16]

the circumstance of his being washed back to our Settlement we do not know. I deferred my journey and prepared for his internment. We employed a Carpenter to make him a Coffin. The Captain, one of the Mates and six of the Sailors came up, and about four o'clock we carried his remains into the Chapel where besides the regular funeral service we sang a Hymn and I gave a short address to the sailors and those present. Afterwards his poor Body was borne by his ship Mates to the House appointed for all living. Oh that this solemn event may be sanctified to one & all concerned!

Sat: 21st – Returned this Evening from the Bay of Islands for which place I set off on Tuesday morning. Was most kindly received by all my old friends, by the two William's especially and their truly excellent wives. Had much pleasing & profitable conversation with them respecting Missionary operations in general in New Zealand;

and was very much pleased with the spirit they manifest towards all engaged in attempting to do the New Zealanders good. Some things however which they communicated respecting Bro. Wm. and his movements were very grievous but I hope all former differences will now be lost and the spirit of love & peace reign amongst us. God has evidently crowned their labours with considerable success in the Moral, Spiritual & Temporal Welfare of those for whom they have been labouring. Many are enjoying the blessings of salvation and some in connection therewith are beginning to taste the sweets of civilized life. On my return home today stopped at the house of a Christian Native whom I had known in his heathen state and was treated by him with a good basin of boiled milk. This Man is becoming a regular Farmer. He told me that he has now six cows in Milk, from which his makes Butter which they

[Page 17]

sell to the Missionaries and others for Cloaths & other articles of which they stand in need. I found him quite busy preparing a considerable piece of land for wheat. Two or three villages through which I passed are becoming regularly Christian. They have got their little Chapel in which public worship is performed, and school instruction attended unto. Was delighted just as I had left the Waimate early this morning I passed a number of Natives who had been encamped for the night by the way side, and having just aroused from their slumbers, they had met together to offer their Morning Sacrifice to that Being of whom until of late they had never heard. One who appeared to be the head of the party was reading a Chapter out of Luke for their Morning Lesson. At another place I saw a number of people coming out of their little Chapel where they had been assembled for the same purpose. On my way over I was overtaken by heavy rain & the darkness of night before I could reach the Waimate and was obliged to take up my Lodgings in a Native house in a small village, and here I was pleased to find the man at whose house I stopped had been baptized into the Christian faith, could read the Scriptures well, and with his people was quite attentive to the Ordinances of religion amongst them. Oh! how different are these things from what existed when I was driven from New Zealand with the loss of all but life a little better than nine years ago. The Lord hasten the time when every tribe amongst this people shall bow to the sceptre of an adorable Immanuel! Was truly thankful to be brought to the close of my journey in health and peace, and to find my family with the exception of Martha enjoying the same blessings. Thanks be to God for all his Mercies!

[Page 18]

Monday, June, 17th – Since the date of my last entry I have been the subject of the most severe and dangerous affliction the Lord has ever laid upon me. Shortly after my return from the Bay of Islands my frame became seriously affected with cold attended with fever, for the removal of which I took Medicine, and it produced in a good degree the desired effect. On Sunday the 29th May was very poorly, but on the following morning felt much better, and having previously engaged to accompany the Carpenter with a number of our Natives down to the Heads to fix upon the site for and to put up the Frame of a House for Bro. Whitely, and the morning being exceedingly fine I was induced to go through contrary to the opinion of the friends on the Station, & the urgent solicitations of my wife. I expected we should soon arrive at the house of our friend Cap. Young, who lives near the spot to which we were going, but our Natives were excessively idle and would not pull, we were therefore kept on the water until seven in the Evening through which I took fresh cold. Was provided with comfortable bed etc. by Mrs. Young, but could scarce sleep at all, the fever having increased so much upon me. Though very unwell went to the place on which

we intended to build accompanied by Cap: Young. Here some little unpleasantness took place with the Natives which excited my frame and increased the fever. Returned to Cap: Young's very ill, scarce able to walk at all – retired to rest after bathing my feet in warm water & taking a Bason of Arraroot, but no sleep could I obtain by reason of the pain in my Head & the burning Fever throughout my System. About 2 o'clock A.M. felt much worse and became dreadfully sick, when I called up

[Page 19]

June 1836

Cap: Young to prepare me an Emetic, which Major Oakes (who had seen me the day before) had kindly recommended and sent. I took it and it operated in the most powerful manner upon the Bowels, keeping me in a state of almost convulsive effect from head to foot from two to near six o'clock; being in an a contraction of the Muscles of the Hands and feet accompanied with strong pain something like the Cramp. Finding myself so ill I felt exceedingly desirous of getting home immediately, but wind & tide forbade until afternoon, when the Cap: Young's Boat was prepared & I wrapped very warm and put into. And while on the River, though all but insensible I believe I endured the most severe temptation from the Enemy of Souls, but the Lord appeared to my help. When the Boat arrived at the Settlement I was taken out in a state of perfect Delirium. Dr. Smith a Medical Man residing on the River was immediately called in, and succeeded in bleeding me freely, and giving me Medicine which operated favourably. The following Morning I had a lucid interval for a short time, but the fever raged dreadfully, and I continued very ill and my head affected with heavy rolling pain.

The Revd. Wm. Williams, who also has been instructed in the Art of Medicine was immediately sent for, and who on hearing of my Affliction lost no time but came with all speed in dreadful weather to my help. He united his skill with Dr. Smith and by the blessing of God on their means the fever was in a few days in a great degree brought

[Page 20]

under. Mr. Williams remained with me three days, and his kind sympathy giving spirit, and pious counsel were quite a cordial to my mind. Having been confined to my Bed for about a fortnight, was enabled to be removed for a few hours to the Sofa and blessed be God I am now so far recovered as to be enabled to walk about the Room and attend to business a little.

On the evening of the 10th inst: Mr. White visited bringing word that the Brethren and their families, with their property had been brought in safety to Kaipara, and that he had there left them in the vessel working up the River, and had come over land. He came down to see me and appeared to sympathise with me in my affliction. His conduct however soon proved that his sympathy for me was not very great, or of but very short duration.

After he had gone down to the southward I set Mr. Woon to Print some extracts from the scriptures in the form of a Harmony of the Gospels in the form of a Tract for the Natives they having nothing to read. He took offence but without reason at what I had done and ordered Mr. Woon to take down the Press and remove it out of the Room where he himself had put stating that he required the room. Mr. Woon came to me to know what he must do, I sent him to request Mr. W. to allow him to strike off the half sheet that he had in hand, especially as the Paper was melted down and would be spoiled. This however he absolutely refused and forced him to take the Press away. He then refused to allow him by my direction to put it up in another building

[Page 21]

June – 1836

not occupied at the time for any purpose. I then set the Carpenter to put a temporary floor down in another old spare building that the Press may be put up there and the Printing proceed. Mr. White however went & took the Carpenter away to something else insisting that the Printing should not proceed. In addition to this he sent me a note such as in my very weak state might have done me serious injury, charging me with that of which I was perfectly innocent. My mind suffered not a little from these things – and the consequence is Mr. Woon is standing still while the Natives are destitute of anything to read.

On the 17th the Brethren Whitely & Wallis arrived having come over land & brought Mrs. Whitely & Children to Cap: Young's near the Heads.

My health being considerably improved, and Mr. White having expressed strong desire if his affairs could be gone through, to go by way of the Colony in the Martha now in the River that he might from thence proceed to England.

On Tuesday June 21st we commenced the business of our Special District Meeting. Present Self, Mr. White and the Brethren Whitely & Wallis. The Committee's Instructions &c. to me were then read, in which the charges prepared against Mr. White by the Revd. W. Yate are included and the Com's. requisitions to me to investigate them state: After much conversation and many objections raised by Mr. White, the First charge prepared against him, viz., "Drunkness" was taken up and considered, but from all the information we possessed this charged could not be proved – nor do I think that in this particular he has been guilty in the way Mr. Yate has represented.

[Page 22]

Sat: 25th – During the last four days we have been attending for several hours each day to the charges against Mr. White, which principally arising out of his objections, quibbles, &c. ~~were~~ have been very painful as well as the distressing nature of the charges themselves. My patience has been put to the test indeed, for my nerves I prove have received a severe shock by my late severe attack of fever. Alas! Alas! for my poor Brother! The further we proceed into his affairs, the more black & distressing they appear.

Thanks be to God, though I have thus been painfully exercised, my bodily strength has increased a little.

Sunday 26th – This has been to me a better day than most of late. This afternoon the English service was held in our house, conducted by Bro: Whitely who Preached a most judicious, and impressive Sermon from "Prepare to meet they God". I was much delighted, and my soul was truly refreshed. Blessed be my God who has thus raised me up again so far as to be enabled to enjoy the privilege of worshipping with his people!

Tuesday, 28th – A day of Trial indeed to me. Prior to my leaving Sydney for this place I received lengthened communications from Cap: McDonald, Assistant British Resident, Hokianga, containing various charges against the Revd. Wm. White our Missionary, variously affecting his moral character. Some of these charges were in the form of Depositions taken by him from native females, charging him with criminal connections with them. On my arrival here I heard the most wretched character of McDonald that man could have, and strong declarations of innocence from and in behalf of Mr. White.

[Page 23]

June – 1836

And finding that Mr. White's causes had forwarded copies of these charges to the Authorities in both Colonies, to our Comer, and to other public characters – and likewise that he read these black accounts to all the Europeans on this River, and had sent a Copy open to the Bay of Islands for any or every sailor to read, who was disposed so to do. From these circumstances I resolved (if possible) to call a Meeting of the most respectable inhabitants on the River and before them to have Mr. White & Cap: Mcdonald face to face and to have these charges substantiated or disproved. But that I might not in this be misguided I when over at the Bay of Islands, consulted the Brethren of the Church Missy. Society, and likewise Mr. Busby, the British Resident, and all agreed that such a step ought to be taken that Mr. White might clear himself.

Cap: Mcdonald was informed by me in Person of my intention, when he stated his willingness to concur in the Affair, and his readiness to meet Mr. W. on the subject. As the Brethren Whitely & Wallis were come up from the Southward I judged it best to defer the intended meeting until they would be prepared to attend. While the vessel was fetching up the Brethren from Waikato I was taken very ill, but was so far recovered as just to be able to be brought from the Bed to the Sofa in the adjoining room when they arrived. On their arrival without saying a single word to me, called in a great hurry such a public Meeting himself, but McDonald refused to obey his Summons, but informed the

[Page 24]

Meeting that he would attend if such Meeting was called by me. From this Meeting a Deputation was appointed to wait upon me to call another Meeting that McDonald might attend. On Tuesday Morning the 21st they waited upon me, viz., Major Oakes, Cap: Young, Mr. Mitchell, and (I think) Mr. Butler. They stated their object, but observed that Mr. White wished to have it on the following day. All however thought it very desirable if possible that I should be present, and the same I thought myself but they saw I was far from being able to attend, and therefore it was agreed that the Meeting should be held on this Day at Te Horeki, Mcdonald's resident, and we hoped that I should be to by the time arrived to attend.

The trying circumstances of the week however had kept me back so that I was strongly prohibited to attend, and believing it might do me serious injury to be present I wrote to that effect to the Meeting, at the same time stating that object in which I had called it &c. &c. The people assembled Mr. White met them, a Chairman chosen (Major Oakes) and a Committee chosen to decide upon the cases. Much was said by Mr. White in the onset by way of objecting, and apparently with a design to quash the meeting at once. At length however he consented, and declared his intention to go through with it if it took a fortnight.

Once case was gone through the first Day, but it was one of comparatively small importance with others. This appeared favourable to him. The Meeting adjourned until the following Morning - When to the astonishment of all his friends, he attended but only to inform them that he had made up his mind not to proceed further in the business as he had resolved to seek redress in another quarter. He then retired leaving all present to draw their own conclusions. Alas! Alas! Alas! My Brother! A Deputation was immediately appointed (amongst whom

[Page 25]

were my Brethren) to wait up me as I had called the meeting to know what they should now do, proceed with the investigation or otherwise. After consulting with my Brethren Whitely & Wallis, I came to this Decision – That as the Meeting had been called by me principally to give Mr. White an opportunity of defending himself by

meeting his accusers face to face – he having voluntarily turned his back upon them in refusing to proceed in meeting his accusers who were there present, the Meeting of course must be at an end so far as I was concerned, as I could not be responsible for anything that might be said or done towards Mr. White when absent. The Majority of the Committee entertained the same views, and the Meeting was therefore immediately dissolved. Cap: McDonald however and his friends resolved forthwith upon proceeding with the investigation of the manner.

A new Chairman & Com. ee were elected, and again they intend upon the black & painful business. The Brethren Whitely & Wallis thought it right to remain and as far as they could defend their absent Brother. Permission was given them by the Com. ee to not only be present but to ask any questions, state any objection, cross examine the witnesses &c &c and from what I can collect as yet Friday, July 1st awful things are made to appear. Lord have mercy upon us! My heart is ready to faint within me.

Sat: 2nd – Thursday Bro: Wallis left us to Kaipara to visit his family, and to return by Wednesday Evening next, when our District Meeting will proceed with its painful business. Mr. Stephenson arrived last Evening from Kaipara, and with him had much conversation which relieved my mind a good deal upon certain subjects – on others however the darkness was only increased.

[Page 26]

Sunday, 3rd – Rather a barren Day to my soul though I felt some degree of quickening while Bro. Whitely commented on the Christian privileges as contained in the Eighth Chapter to the Romans, particularly while Mr. Stephenson afterwards engaged in Prayer. He is a Man who has power with God.

Bro: & Sister Whitely took Tea with us, they appear to me very free & agreeable, I like them much.

Mon: 4th – Mr. H. Oakes called upon me on his way home from Te Horeki, wherein he had been all week sitting as Chairman at the Meeting considering the awful charges against Mr. White, the result of which investigation he called to leave me – And Alas! By them He must be viewed as awfully fallen and degraded. They conclude from the evidence that came before them that he had been guilty of loose & immoral conduct. Bro: Whitely who attended during the whole of the investigation, and defended his absent Bro: as far he could consistently, says that he himself cannot come to any other conclusion. Lord save me!

Sat: 9th – Bro: Wallis not having returned from Kaipara, we have not attended to any public business this week, but most of the week has been spent by me in writing on public affairs &c &c.

Thanks be to God my health is so far improved that I have been able to venture out of Doors a few times while the weather was fine. Have been feeling concerned about my family & circumstances. My wife is very unwell with Cold &c., and little Wesley has been very ill most of the Week. Our circumstance has affected me much during the Week, viz., Mr. White gave public notice last Sabbath ~~last Sabbath~~ for a Public Baptism of upwards of seventy

[Page 27]

Natives tomorrow week. This I have felt it my duty to oppose for various reasons, principally because of their (in my judgment) being for the most part not being prepared for so important an Ordinance. No Catechetical instruction whatever has been attended to relative to them – nor had Mr. W. thought proper to say a single

word to me on the subject. I feared my opposition would lead to serious consequences but now hope it will be well received. Wrote Mr. W. my reasons to be read to the Natives assembled at worship tomorrow and he promised the same should be done. O for heavenly wisdom!

Sunday, 10th – A pretty good Sabbath to my soul. In consequence of the rain could not venture out to Chapel, but enjoyed the English Service much. Mr. Butler preached us a most excellent Sermon from Rom: 1st – 14, 15, 16. The matter was excellent. Enjoyed the Evening much with my family after reading Ed: Hare's Sermon on "Christ Crucified". I catechised my elder Children upon the Doctrines they had heard &c &c., and they had answered me not only to my satisfaction but surprise. Felt it very good to bring them before the Throne of grace.

Sat: 16 – This has been a week of considerable perplexity and trial. Nearly the whole week has been spent in trying to settle Mr. White's account of this Mission for 1835 – but we were almost as far off on leaving of us when we began. Such confusion in affairs I never had to do with before. Oh how thankful shall I be when Mr. White's concerns are brought to a close!

Sunday 17th – Attended the Native Service this morning, the first time for the last eight weeks in consequence of affliction. I felt grateful for being once permitted to assemble in the house of Prayer.

[Page 28]

The Congregation was good, and Mr. W. addressed them from Rom: 1 – 16. But my deeply affected mind could not profit by his Ministry, arising out of what has transpired so painfully detrimental to his character.

Mr. Wallis gave us a Superior Sermon in English at our house in the afternoon on the "Day of Judgment". I did not however feel its importance as I wished and ought to have done. This Sabbath has not been so profitable to me for spirituality as the last.

Tues: 19th – This has been a day of sore Trial to me. In the course of our District business we have been brought at length to a most painful part of the charges against him, viz: "His personal differences with his Brethren". These the Com.ee enjoined upon me "Thoroughly to investigate". In so doing, in the most mild and agreeable manners that I could, I was led to propose questions &c &c which though necessary were painful to his feelings. He commenced an attack upon me in a most abusive manner, charging me with "laying snares to entrap him", "Grasping at every thing to criminate him &c &c. He denounced my proceedings as "Unconstitutional, Unmethodistical, and Tyrannical". Surely man was never more unjustly chase than me in these matters. I found it hard work to brook & bear such insensible treatment. When about to take up some still more serious charges against him, He absolutely refused to hear them, and abruptly left the Meeting, leaving us to consider the remainder alone, &c &c.

Oh how deeply distressed has my mind been through the day with his conduct! And while I cannot but seriously blame him, yet I stand astonished at his conduct in sinning so glaringly against his own interest. He certainly cannot intend, notwithstanding all his professed intention to meet the Committee!

[Page 29]

July 1836

Sat: 23rd – I am through mercy brought through one of the most trying weeks of my life. At times I have been ready to sink beneath my burden, but hitherto I have been

sustained. The more we enter into our unhappy Brother's affairs, the more cause of grief & sorrow do we discover. Oh! that I may learn wisdom from the failings of others!

Sunday, 24th – Poorly this Morning, and not well able to attend the Native Service and hear Mr. White give his farewell address to the Natives. Many I was informed were much affected. In the afternoon was enabled to speak a little in English from "In my Father's House are many Mansions &c &c.", and found it good so to do, but was very weak in doing.

Wed: 27th – A day of peculiar trial. We closed our Accounts with Mr. White, and had most painful feelings with him. On various subjects of importance he absolutely refused give us the least information, though solicited and entreated so to do. Never did I in my life see a Man so unreasonable, and manifest a spirit so contrary to the Gospel.

In the height of his angry feeling he told us that he would not shake hands with us or bid us Farewell at all &c &c. Alas! Alas! Poor Bro: White, how unhappy his feelings!

Thurs: 28th – This Morning Mr. White & family took their leave of us & went on Board "The Martha" for the Colony. I felt very much indeed at the thought of his leaving us in such a spirit as manifested yesterday. Just before he left however he sent for us and we went up and sung & Prayed together in the presence of the Natives. But what did I feel at recollection of what I had been obliged to write to meet him when he is going. Regarding him as my first Colleague, Brother, & Fellow labourer in the Gospel, I felt much indeed at the idea of parting with him under such circumstances. But enough has been laid upon me.

[Page 30]

Aug:

Sat: 30th – These have been two days of greater tranquillity than most I have had since we came to this land. Still my mind has been distressed with the recollection of the painful circumstances that have lately taken place. Oh! that all these painful things may be sanctified to my good!

Sunday, 31st – Read Prayers this Morning at the Native Service & Mr. Whitely Preached. The congr. was good, and he spoke to them very well. He has got a tolerably good knowledge of the language. In the afternoon I spoke a little in English and found in so doing the truth of my text, viz., "But it is good for me to draw near unto God". The Evening I spent principally in conversation with a few Natives who came in to speak with me.

Aug: 1st, Monday – Another of pain & distress of mind arising out of the unhappy, unchristian conduct of my Predecessor. It appears from circumstances that are transpiring that he would have made a clean sweep of the Mission Property if he could.

Sunday, 8th – Not one of my best Sabbaths, though I felt it good while speaking at Mr. Buller's from "Where two or three are gathered together in my name &c.". Poor Mr. Buller has been very unwell of a fever brought on by taking cold but the Lord is restoring him.

Sat: 13th – This has been a week of some painful exercise to the mind, as well as hard labor to the Body – gardening &c. Mr. F. White has said & written some painful things to me concerning my treatment of his Brother &c. but I have the testimony of

an approving conscience. Others also I find have been writing in defence of Mr. Wm. White's conduct, and in a way designedly to depreciate mine, but from these I have nothing to fear. Alas his cause is bad to need the help of some to whom he has applied!

[Page 31]

August 1836 – Our Native attendance was pretty good today, and our English Congregation larger than on any former occasion. The means of grace I found profitable to my Soul – but I want more life within.

Sat. 20th – Have been very busy this week in the Garden assisting Mr Whitely to build a Chimney &c &c but it has been a week of Peace to my mind – we are now getting things a little more orderly about us both in respect to temporal and spiritual matters.

Sunday 21st – Accompanied by Mr Whitely visited the Waima Settlement today, but the Tide being rather unfavourable we did not arrive at Tawais residence until near evening – By him and his people we were received with great pleasure, and after we had obtained some refreshment about seventy persons assembled to worship the Author of all good – Amongst these we were quite struck with the appearance of five very venerable looking old men who sat altogether to listen to the word of life – None of them from appearance could be less than 70 years of age – It was a most pleasing sight to behold these aged sinners sitting at the feet of Jesus to learn the way of Salvation through faith in his blood. Bro: Whiteley addressed them in a very pleasing manner and when public service was over Tawhai the Chief particular wished that we would spend some time in free conversation with these aged men. In this he was gratified for Bro: W in particular remained with them until after Midnight I however being weary retired sooner to rest, my rest however in a New Zealanders hut was not very refreshing, and the night was very cold I could not but pity the poor Natives comparing their Lodging &c with our own.

[Page 32]

September

Mon: 22nd – Spent some hours with the people this morning before we set off for home. Upon the whole was much pleased with this visit, and I am fully convinced that a Missionary ought to be stationed here without delay. In my judgment it is the most promising place for a Missionary station of any I have seen in this part of New Zealand, and many of the people are exceedingly desirous that one should take up his abode amongst them. They represented their condition by a singular figure viz: that of a man whose gun was broken, and had no blacksmith to whom he could go to have it pieced. The Missionary is the Smith, his instructions &c piercing the Gun.-

Sunday, 28th – Our native services have been well attended today, and a considerable number of Catechumins were present at the two o'clock Classroom of whom express themselves in a very pleasing manner whilst with others I was by no means satisfied. I was particularly struck with the figurative manner in which they nearly all expressed their views &c but in most there was a great want of that inward feeling of Soul which we are so desirous of seeing. We had a pretty good attendance at our English Service to whom I spoke with freedom & plainness from “Neither is there any Creature that is not manifest in his sight &c” – May the Lord bless his word!

Sat: 3rd – Have spent several days this week in conjunction with my Brethren & the Natives in putting in some wheat, but the weather has been very wet & uncomfortable. Spent two nights with my Brethren in a Hut amongst the natives at

Waihou which gave us an opportunity of observing some of them in their habits of Domestic worship and we were pleased to find that they assembled night and morning for this purpose.

[Page 33]

Sunday, 4th – Accompanied Bro: Whitely up the Manawatu River this morning, and for the first time since my return to New Zealand attempted to address the Natives in their own tongue, but scanty knowledge of the language prevented my saying much to them – I was however upon the whole encouraged & hope ere long to be able to preach to them with pleasure to myself and profit to them – About 70 were present – Bro: W enlarged upon what I had said – called at Mr Mitchell's on our return and held a little English service with his family & three of his Neighbours and found it good to my own Soul thus to be employed.

Sat: 10th – This has been a week of pain of Body and much exercise of mind – The enemy of Souls taking hold of circumstances had harried my mind very much but blessed by God my soul was considerably quickened and comforted last night at our little Class Meeting.

Sunday, 11th –The native attendance has been good today and the meetings with them interesting. Our English Congregation was but small, but I felt it profitable to my own Soul to recommend to them the “One thing needful” – Thanks be to God I feel that Mary's choice is mine! O may I still hold it fast!

Sat: 17th – This has been a good week to me – we have been much refreshed from on high at our little English Prayer Meeting & Class Meeting this week especially at the latter last Evening truly it was to me a refreshing season!

This morning left home to visit our people at the top of the Manamuka River, accompanied by Mr Woon & Mr Hawke (a young man who has come here in the “James Laisy” on his way to England – we arrived towards evening and were received with pleasure by the people of our charge visited some of them in their houses and there took some refreshment of that we had brought with us – About seven their rude Bell, a large West India

[Page 34]

Hoe was rung to call them to public service and their neat little Chapel was soon tolerably well filled – Bro: Woon conducted the service – After which we commenced giving tickets to those who have for some time met in Class – This is a new thing in New Zealand, and we found some difficulty in causing them at first to understand its nature & design. When understood however it appeared to give them sincere pleasure thus to be recognized as Members of our Society. We had a very gracious feeling pervading us all the time, and the experience of many of them gave us real pleasure. Their state by Nature & practice as sinners, and the one only way of Salvation through Christ appears to be well understood in theory, and I hope by a good many of them in experience also. We continued at our pleasure exercise until about ten oclock and then concluded for the night. After taking a little additional refreshment we made our Beds upon the Chapel Floor and retired to rest weary in Body but happy in mind.

Sunday, 18th – Rose early and after breakfast called the people together again for Public Worship when at least 800 assembled to worship the “Lord of Sabbaoth” – Bro: Woon read the Prayers and I afterwards preached to them on the Parable of the “Rich Man & Lazarus” – Had tolerable good freedom in speaking and felt refreshed in

my own Soul, while endeavouring to water them. Great attention was paid and the subject I hope understood and felt – Oh that the Spirit from on high may be poured out upon this people! – After Public service was concluded we met two other Classes for Tickets, principally candidates from Baptism, and the experience of many of them was very encouraging – Oh that they all may find redemption in his blood the forgiveness of their sins!

About one we left this interesting spot and came down to Mr Mitchel's, where we dined and afterwards I spoke to them in English with freedom from "Moses lifting up the Serpent in the Wilderness" – Returned home with a grateful mind.

[Page 35]

Sat. 26th – This has been a week of greater spiritual feeling than any I have before spent in New Zealand. God has been very gracious unto us in our little English service. They have indeed been seasons of great refreshment from the presence of the Lord. Felt it very profitable to my own Soul attempting to speak to the natives this Evening, and afterwards in giving Tickets to two Classes.

Sunday 25th – A Sabbath of more than common interest to me. Our native Congregations were very good. Cap. McDonnell accompanied a Mr. & Mrs. Thompson & a Mr. Marriner attended. After the service was concluded I married Mr. Saml. Davenport to Mary Ann Perry, a young woman we brought with us as Servant from the Colony. May their marriage be blessed. Afterwards met a number of candidates for baptism with most of whom I felt pleased.

One English service at three was better attended than usual. Cap. Gedney of the James Laing and six of his men were present, and I was favoured with pretty good freedom in addressing them from Psalm 4th – 6th, "There are many that say, who will shew us very good etc". My soul felt quite drawn out after the happiness of all that were present. The Lord Convert them! After Sermon Baptized James Martin the infant Son of Mr. & Mrs. Bull. May the "Angel of the Covenant bless the Child"! Found it profitable to myself in the native service in the Evening. Never heard Bro. Whitely speak with so good freedom before. Then afterwards had a meeting with our Native Leaders and some of the principal persons to settle some little matters with them, especially a misunderstanding about each retaining his Native Name when baptized as a surname. Though objections were raised to this by several who had been baptized for some time

[Page 36]

but who had not been taught the propriety of retaining their old as a family name. The main objection however we found to be (with several) that their former name was an ugly or evil one. A remedy was proposed for this in allowing them to change this for another and all appeared to approve of the thing when properly explained unto them.

Oct. 1st – Saturday. By the goodness of my heavenly Father am I brought to the close of another week which had been one of mingled exercise and feeling to my mind. Sometimes I have been very low in my mind at others have been much encouraged, especially at one Class last Evening. The gracious Spirit did indeed operate powerfully upon my mind. I have felt a good deal on account of the painful intelligence we have received from the Brother at the Bay of Islands concerning the base conduct of – Gates. Alas! how depraved is human nature. Ah that I may endure unto the end!

Sunday 2nd – Had a pretty good day to my Soul. Was much [indecipherable] &

softened in my feelings while speaking to my Countrymen from "I must work the works of him that sent me while it is day &c." A gracious influence rested upon us, and I hope good was effected.

I found it very profitable at both the native service and also while giving Tickets to some of the people whose experience was very satisfactory. Their views in general are clear but they want more of the influence of the spirit fully to renew the heart.

Sat. 8th – Another week has pas'd into Eternity and carried those sands with it, but I am still alive. It has been a week of mercy from my God – though of some trial. On Monday morning sister Moore was delivered of a son. She had hard travail but the Lord granted strength & Deliverance.

[Page 37]

Sunday 9th – A pretty good Sabbath. I felt it very good to myself while addressing my Countrymen from "Salvation belongeth to the Lord. Thy blessing is upon thy people". A gracious influence rested upon us. The native services were pretty well attended. Spoke to them a little in the Evening. During the interval of public worship was engaged giving Tickets, and speaking to the Candidates for Baptism.

Sat: 15th – This has been rather a stormy and uncomfortable week. This has been an exceedingly busy day in fixing names &c &c for the Candidates for Baptism tomorrow of whom we have many. Was amused and surprised at the singular choosing of names that many of them made, though from the Scriptures. And for some it was difficult to find a name that would please them.

Sunday, 16th – The most interesting day we have had at Mangangu. The Chapel was overflowing. Bro. Wallis (who arrived from Kaipara last Evening) commenced the service by reading part of the Liturgy. He then spoke to them on the subject of Baptism, and I afterwards endeavoured to speak to them on the same important and interesting theme of their initiation into the Church of Christ. Bro. Whiteley then read the Baptismal service, and afterwards we Baptized in the name of the sacred Trinity upwards of one Hundred and 429 adults. There was not that melting influence resting upon us as I wished and longed to see and feel still it was affecting to see so many of these once truly savage men submitting to the peaceable yoke and sceptre of the Saviour. Three of them were Chiefs of Rank, and several were truly venerable for age. These are truly amongst the triumphs of our Redeemer's Crop. May they be saved Eternally.

[Page 38]

After our English service which was conducted by Bro: Wallis, we married Twenty-seven Couples of those we had in the morning introduced into the Church. I had for some time felt considerable exercise of mind relative to Tawai one of the Chiefs baptized. In his heathen state he had two wives, to both of whom he felt strongly attached. He appeared to have stronger affn. for his oldest wife, but she had brought him no Children. By the younger of the two he had two Children. At length after much deliberation & strong feeling he chose the latter and abandoned the former. And of his choice we could not but approve. To me and Mrs. Turner it was the more interesting as she was formally a Slave & Redeemed by us when at Mangaroo and then trained up to be one of the best New Zealand Servants we ever had. O that they may be faithful till death!

Sat: 22nd – On Monday Morning we commenced our District Meeting and have continued together until this Evening, nor have we yet closed. We have been quite of

one heart & mind in all that we have had to attend to - some things arising out of [indecipherable] – proceedings have been very painful especially the enormous expenditures; but this as far as I am concerned has been unavoidable. In my soul I have had some Conflicts, but the Lord has been my refuge and hiding place.

Sunday, 23rd – My mind has not been in so good a frame today as is my general Sabbath Portion, but in the Evening at the Lord's table when met together my Soul got humbled and softened before the Lord. O how good there to draw near!

Sat: 29 – On Tuesday our District Meeting closed, which has been one of harmony & Peace, though not without its Trials. Yesterday was one of sore Conflict, but my mind got relieved at our Class Meeting in the Evening.

[Page 39]

Sunday 30th – A most humbling gracious day to me. Found it profitable at the native service in the Morning, after which ~~we~~ I baptized a number of Children of the Parents who were thus initiated into the Church a few Sabbaths back. The same site I also administered to the infant Daughter of Brother & Sister Whiteley. They have named her after that holy woman the late Mrs. Mary Fletcher of Madeby. In the afternoon we held an English service at Bro: Woon's when I spoke a few words from "Bless the Lord O my Soul, &c." A most melting influence rested upon us during the service after which I baptized the Infant Son of Bro: & Sister Woon. They have named him Edwin Turner – The latter after myself. May the "good will of him that dwelt in the bush rest upon him". Bro: Whiteley addressed the Natives in the Evening with great freedom in the Suffering & Death of Christ, and afterwards we administered the Lord's Supper to upwards of a Hundred of these once poor savages, but who are now Members of the Christian Church. It was truly a solemn & profitable time. They approached the Table with far greater solemnity & Decorum than what I ever expected to see from New Zealanders. It was very pleasing to me to witness the care manifested by the Leaders that no improper persons should partake the Holy Supper and some I believe conscientiously staid away from a sense of their sinfulness and unworthiness before the Lord. Each Member said this on his ticket in the form before them. This was done to prevent any but Members from partaking.

Monday 31st – According to previous arrangement Bro. Whiteley & I prepared to leave for Kaipara this morning but hearing that our kind friend Mr. Mitchell was very ill we hastened to see him before we set off, and on our arrival found him very ill of I believe inflammation in the Bowells. According to the Doctor's wish I took some Blood from him and fresh Medicine was administered which we hoped would prove very beneficial. After

[Page 40]

endeavouring to impress his mind with the importance of being ready for the solemn hour should Death come and Praying with him we returned, though with sorrowful Minds that we had to leave him so ill. Towards Evening we left home for the Heads and were received & treated with kindness by Mr. & Mrs. Young with whom we stopped for the night.

Wed: Nov. 2nd – Early yesterday Morning we left the Heads and by night arrived at the usual resting place in the Bush, and being weary with our journey we enjoyed comfortable repose upon our Beds of Fern. During the former part of the day I was so unwell as to fear being able to hold on my way and prosecute the journey but

towards Evening was much better.

About six A.M. we were again on the move and for two hours our way lay through one of the roughest woods through which surely Man & Horse ever passed. By one we arrived at Kaikea, one of the principal settlements in the Kaipara District, and is situated in nearly the Centre of the finest valley I have ever seen in New Zealand, but its inhabitants are very few, apparently not more than One Hundred. The Chief Parare appeared Bro: Wallis should settle with him. Here Bro: W. met us but did not arrive until late in the afternoon. We ventured however to proceed with him home, where we arrived about 11 o'clock sufficiently tired but thankful for preserving Mercies. Sister Wallis & her little Daughter we found very well.

Friday, 4th – Yesterday, though the weather was very unfavourable we set off up the Wairoa from Mangakaihia to accomplish the object for which we came over, viz. to look out for a suitable place for a Mission Station for Bro: Wallis. We pulled up at least 40 Miles, but the night coming on and the rain falling very heavy we were obliged to stop alight at a small Settlement some Miles from the place

[Page 41]

and truly our lodging in an old Potatoe House was far from being enviable and when I awoke my back ached not a little. The morning was very rainy, and from what had fallen in the night there was a great fresh in the River but after a strong pull we arrived at the Pa or Principal place of residence. The Chief Tiraran met us at the place we lodged all night, and being aware of the object of our visit was prepared to receive us. He expressed his entire appreciation of Mr. Wallis coming to reside among his people to [indecipherable] them. After some refreshment we accompanied the Chief to the place he had fixed upon in his own mind for the Mission Settlement, and we mutually thought it would answer very well, and without much difficulty we effected a Purchase of the land for £40 - 20 in Cash and twenty in various articles of trade. With this place & prospects my mind is satisfied, but our Bro: & Sister will be very lonely. They will be full a Hundred Miles in Land from the Heads of the River and about three days journey over land from Mangangu. O may the gracious Lord preserve and bless them! Amen.

The wind & tide being favourable we had a pleasant run down of four hours to Mr. W's temporary abode.

Sunday, 6th – The day being exceedingly wet we could not set off for home yesterday according to our wish, but being more favourable this Morning, after service and Dinner, we bade our friends adieu intending to get to Kaikea in time to have service with the people. On our arrival however at the River we met with considerable detention and danger from the Heads. We succeeded however in getting to our resting place well enough before dark and had an interesting service in their little Chapel with the people. They listened with great attention while I addressed them on the subject of the New Birth – after which we had a long conversation with the Chief

[Page 42]

Parore and then returned to rest on the Chapel Floor.

Monday, 7th – Early this Morning we recommenced our journey home, but the Horses having been left on the other side the River over Night were a little [indecipherable]. Our road for some Miles lay through a very wet, dirty wood, and having repeatedly to cross the River we got very wet, but by one we arrived at our resting place. Having passed the worst of our road and the afternoon being fine we felt disposed to push our Horses onward as near home as practicable before dark. In crossing a River that

empties itself into the sea just where we had to pass over, we were in considerable danger. The tide being in and the heavy rain had swollen the River very much, so that we were obliged to swim over on the Backs of our Horses by which means we got our Cloathes, Blankets & every thing completely wet. This stimulated us to push on to Hokianga if possible, and by ten O'clock we arrived in safety at Major Oakes, where we met with a kind reception. But Oh! how our minds were distress'd over learning that our Friend Mr. Mitchel had passed into another world the day before.

Tuesday, 8th – A most wet & Thundery night, and having left our Lads behind we feared being able to get in time for the Funeral of our Friend. We hired a Boat's Crew however and got in time for me to perform the last act of Friendship in committing his mortal remains to the Dust. We had more of our Country-men in attendance than I ever saw together here before. I addressed them at some length and with freedom from "Set thine house in Order, for thou shalt die and not live". A deep solemnity rested upon us all, and some seemed to feel much. I sincerely hope this dispensation will have a good effect upon all. For his poor widow and five

[Page 43]

Children I feel much. It is a great consolation however both to her and to us that the Lord was very merciful to him during his short but severe affliction, and that he died with a firm assurance of the Mercy of his God through Jesus in whom he believed for Salvation. O may the Widow & Children be thy peculiar care, thou best of all Beings!

Sat: 12th – This has indeed been a week of mercy & goodness to me. The Death of our friend Mitchell has led me to feel more fully the importance of Eternal realities. At our Prayer Meeting on Wednesday Evening, and Class last Evening we had most solemn & affecting sessions. Accompanied by Bro: Whitely yesterday visited the bereaved Widow & Children with whom I feel deep sympathy of soul. "It is good to go to the house of Mourning."

Sunday, 13th – An interesting Sabbath to me. The Native Service was pretty well attended & Bro: Whitely endeavoured to improve the late Death of Mr. Mitchell to the Natives from the Death & Resurrection of Lazarus. And in the afternoon I addressed our English Friends of from "These are they that came out of great tribulation &c &c." It was a profitable season though I had not liberty of Speech. Poor Mrs. Mitchel was present also Miss M., Cap. & Mrs. Young & Mrs. Butler, which made our attendance much better than usual.

Bro: Whiteley gave us an excellent Sermon in the Evening from "Unto you that believe he is precious". It was truly a good season. My soul rejoiced in God my Saviour in whom I had and did believe to me Christ is precious.

Wednesday 16 – Have been very busy these three days preparing our Dispatches for England, some of which have caused deep distress of Soul – those relating to poor W. Lord have mercy upon him.

[Page 44]

This Evening one of Mr. W's old servants made some awful disclosures to us relative to certain Deeds of Darkness committed by him. Almost too black to be believed but yet so circumstantially given that they cannot well be discredited. Our minds were awfully affected on hearing such things related of a Minister of Religion. Oh what need to watch & Pray & Cleave to him who can Deliver & preserve to his heavenly Kingdom!

Friday – Novr. 18th – At Eight this Morning Mrs. Turner was safely Delivered of a fine little girl our Eleventh Child. The time came on suddenly & somewhat unexpected but he who had given power to bring to the Birth graciously favoured his handmaid with Power to bring forth. Oh how kind is the Lord unto us an unworthy family. This is the fourth Child we have had born in our little Mission Community within three months – and all through mercy are doing well.

Our very kind friend widow Mitchell came down this Evening to spend a day or two with Mrs. T. that she might render her a little help in time of need.

Sat. 19th – A day of hard work to the Body, and considerable exercise to the mind in some of the awful statements made a few days ago respecting – were indirectly confirmed by Nene one of the Principal Chiefs of this District, to whom the young man made his complaint known when the evil was first made known to him. The case now appears to us to be beyond doubt – awful work!

Sunday, 20th – Native attendance not quite so good as usual. Bro: Whitely addressed them in the morning from “The Rich Man & Lazarus” and I in the Evening from “As I live with the Lord I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked &c.” And was favoured with good freedom of soul and speech. The

[Page 45]

attention of the people showed they felt & interest in what was said. The Lord make his word prosperous!

After Evening service we called our Leaders together and laid before them some of the awful things we had heard from time to time concerning – W. and urged upon them the importance of investigating these reports whether true or false, that the guilty may be punished & the innocent go free. The matter was clearly brought before them & the importance acknowledged.

At length they [indecipherable] and all said “Let the truth be told by every man, let no one conceal it.” And oh what an awful confirmation was given to the numerous Reports of Adulterous intercourse with – W. and the natives. And the evidence of some was of such a character that it cannot for a moment be doubted by us. Strong feelings were manifested & expressed by some relative to these matters and it was agreed that a fuller investigation should be made on Saturday next.

Saturday 26th – This has been a week of considerable time. There has been [indecipherable] disturbance in the River among the Europeans, and had it not been for the providential interposition of Mr. Whiteley it appears very likely that Blood would have been shed. All [indecipherable] and wrought up to [indecipherable] We are surrounded by a set of awfully wicked men.

A variety of very painful things have been said through the week by those who are interested to conceal matters that are wrong - An [indecipherable] number of Natives assembled on the Settlement to attend the Meeting tonight & the service tomorrow. We were however much surprised & grieved to find that Mr. F. White went in person to the different Chiefs when he thought he could have any influence to prevent

[Page 46]

their attending the Meeting or in any way from making any statements affecting his Brother – And with a good many who are affected by these matters in the timber trade. He succeeded so that our attendance was comparatively thin. But their attempts in the judgment of prudent thoughtful persons on shews poor & is cast in a more unfavourable light. Truth invites investigation, but deeds of Darkness shun the light. After Service the Leaders men requested to stop, but not half of them were

found to be present – some little compassion was felt for a time owing to most of the Leaders keeping away – the others did not therefore feel free to state what they intended. At length Simon Peter gave us a Repetition of what he had before told us relative to two cases affecting Mr W's Moral character – One of a Criminal connection with a Female, who was then present – He had shortly questioned in private, and now she offered upon being asked whether these things were true that they were so. Another case also was confirmed, of a most glaring character. Awful work!

Sunday 27th – An exceedingly trying day. Attempts were made again this morning to prevent the Natives from attending Service, and a goodly few did not attend. The Congn. however was better than I expected. They were very attentive while I addressed them from “For this purpose the Son of God was manifest that he might destroy the works of the Devil.”

After Dinner the Brethren Whitely & [indecipherable] accompanied me to see Nene the Chief at the Head of those who stayed away this Morning. After some free conversation with him he promised to attend in the evening and we left him with good feeling. Satan is making a vigorous effort to scatter, tear and slay this little infant flock.

[Page 47]

December

Was not able to get to Chapel in the Evening, but learnt that the Congregation was good and was very suitably addressed by Haimona Pete, and afterwards by Bro: Whitely. At the close of the service the Chief Nene addressed the people to the effect that the [indecipherable] who had confirmed last Evening the statement she had formerly made of Mr W's criminal intercourse with her should be sent away, or he and his party would leave the Settlement. It closed however with an understanding that the case should be further investigated in the Morning.

Monday 28th – As soon as family circumstances would allow I attended the Meeting at Otaraan. Much had been said before I arrived by way of endeavouring to invalidate her testimony, but all they could say could not move her, she maintained the Position as to His guilt with her and here the matter ended. Poor – 's conversion is bad!

Wed 30th – Arrived this Evening Thos. Welland on his return from the Friendly Islands, to which Mission he had been appointed as an Assistant by the Comer. through the New South Wales District. The Tonga District however not thinking has an eligible man for the work recomo his return by this first opportunity. In this I think they have done very wrong. He is a very good man but not of bright talent. They ought however to have given him a trial. Letters from my Brethren there contain pleasing accounts of the Prosperity of the work. The Lord makes bare his holy Ann. Myself & family are all very unwell with Influenza, and likewise nearly every one around us both Natives & Europeans. May it be sanctified to us!

December Sat: 3rd – This Evening arrived the “Lord Goodical” from Sydney for spars on her way to London. Our old friend White & family are Passengers. Letters from Bro: McKenny have encouraged my mind much. He and the other Brethren in the Colony have not viewed

[Page 48]

my Proceedings with Mr W – in that unfavourable light he had represented. Mr

McKenny refused his [indecipherable] to his returning to England by way of this place, but He was determined to come & therefore took his own Passage by which act he has virtually taken himself out of our hands, and I am resolved to have nothing whatever to do with him. This will save me much trouble & pain.

Letters from VanDiemenland speak in most pleasing term of the Prosperity of our Mission in that colony. The Affectionate remembrances of my old friends there to me and mine have encouraged our hearts.

Sunday, 4th – Was not able to get out all today owing to my own indisposition and that of my Family, but spoke a little in the afternoon to the few Europeans present, but felt it hard work.

The native services were but thinly attended owing to sickness & the weather. Mr W. was not there.

Thursday, 8th – The Weather has been exceedingly hot & uncomfortable these last few days, but today has been more favourable.

Mr Welland left us this Morning for the Bay having been detained by the weather for three days. This afternoon we committed to the Dust the remains of poor Saml.

Butler, Son of one of the first Church Missionaries to this Land. He was drowned in this River a few days ago, and there is great reason to fear He was in a State of Intoxication at the time. Alas! Alas! There was no hope in his death! He has left a Widow & five small Children behind. Though quite unwell I attended the Funeral where I again saw my once beloved Bro: W. who now poor man looks upon me as one of the worst of men, because I have been faithful to my trust which has compelled me to bring to light his Deeds of [indecipherable].

[Page 49]

A little after the Funeral I received a very bulky communication from Mr White, but having resolved for the sake of my own peace & that of the Society to have no correspondence with him I returned it unopened enclosed in an Envelope with the following remarks.

“Munjanjee, Decr. 8th 1836

Revd. Sir,

Having been informed by the Comer. Agent in the Colony that you have returned to this Land in opposition to his wish & instructions, I cannot but regard you in taking such a step as having disconnected yourself with the Wesleyan Mission altogether. I have resolved therefore not to enter into correspondence with you on any subject whatever, and consequently deem it my duty to return your communication unopened.

Yours &c,
Nathn. Turner”

To the Revd. Wm. White

Have since heard from one who saw the Letter that it was a most infamous production, full of scurrility & abuse. Poor unhappy man Lord save him! He has forcibly taken from our herd two of the best Milking Cows for his Brother, in which he had no legal claim upon. Two other Cattle he has taken from the herd and given to the Natives in part payment for Land which he has made over to his Brother, and which Land itself previously belonged to the Mission. Such conduct is awful in my view and very distressing to my mind, but we cannot help ourselves. One to me melancholy part I cannot but record viz. that the only two European friends he had upon the River have both been taken off in one short Month.

[Page 50]

Sunday, 11th – Our Native Congregation was tolerably good this Morning and I spoke to them with tolerable freedom from “We are journeying to the Place of which the Lord hath said I will give you &c”. The afternoon Service was rather barren to me, and in the evening I did not get out. This has been a barren Sabbath to my Soul.

Tuesday 13th – This Morning had a most painful inter[view] with Mr W – after which occasion he called me by the most [indecipherable] names and my Brethren also – and my Brethren He threatened & attempted to strike but was forceably restrained. Alas! Alas! Poor Man! The Lord have mercy upon him and bring him to Repentance. By the mercy of my God I was kept tolerably calm amidst the raging of the fury of this violent Man – once a Brother Missionary. Oh! to grace how great a Debtor am I – Lord keep me to the end!

Sat. 17 – Have been exceedingly busy these few days in preparing Dispatches for the Colony & for the Comer. at home. Last evening we had a soul refreshing lesson at our little class.

Arrived this Evening the Revd. H [indecipherable] to sail from this place for the Colony. He was accompanied by Mr Ashwell another of our Church Brethren. They appear excellent men. Lord forgive the Sins of this week and keep by Thy Mercy thy poor unworthy Servant to Everlasting life!

Sunday 18th – Preached in English this morning by appointment at the Hazeke had about forty of our country Men present, and scarcely ever was I enabled to speak with greater freedom and to the point from “Godliness is profitable unto all things &c”. Deep attention was paid by all, and I hope the word was not without Power.

Monday 19th – Married at the Hazeke this morning Cap: Scully of the Brig. Sterlingshire to the Daughter of Mr Munns a settler on this River and Afterwards I Baptized Major Oakes’ child – may all the parties be blessed with Present & future peace.

[Page 51]

Tuesday, 20th – This Morning set off for the Bay of Islands accompanied by Messrs. Ashwell & Hawke, and after a long & tedious ride arrived in safety at the Maimate where we were gladly received & kindly trated by our Church Misrs. Friends. The main object of my visit was to lay before my Church Brethren & the British Residents an account of Mr W-. Proceedings & to take their advice relative to the same.

This I did, and I was glad to find that in almost every thing they viewed matters in the same light we had done, and approved of the steps we had taken, at the same time sympathizing with us in our sufferings.

Sat: 24th – Returned home very tired with my journey, but thankful to find my family well, and likewise our friends in health and Peace.

Sunday 25th – Christmas Day – Heard Mr Whiteley in Native this morning. Mr Bobart in English in the afternoon with whom I was both pleased & profited. In the Evening I preached with freedom & pleasure from “Verily He took not on him the Nature of Angels”.

Saturday 31st – Have spent the greater part of this week in giving Tickets at the different Native Settlements and have been both encouraged & profited with the same. Have had some serious trials during the week, most of which have arisen

through Mr -W- Through this the closing Day of the Year My soul has been much tried, but at our Watch Night, conducted both in our own & the native tongue my burden was removed and my soul renewed with fresh vigour - It was a most gracious season to most if not all.

Thus have I ended a Year of Many and great Trials, but of many & greater Mercies - to God my Heavenly Father the Everlasting Praise for his goodness to me & mine during Another Year!

[Page 52]

JOURNAL FOR 1837

January 1st, Sunday. A very gracious day to my Soul. The Chapel was well filled at Ten. The Prayers were read by Mr. Whiteley. After which I preached with the best freedom I I was ever favoured with in Native, from "The Barren Fig Tree". The people were deeply attentive and a powerful feeling appeared to be excited throughout the congregation. The impressions I hope were of that character which are not easily effaced.

Mr. & Mrs. White were present, but my mind rose above him, and every human being. I felt the truth of God.

After Dinner we met a number of adults from different villages as candidates for Baptism. I counted about ninety and heard many of them with Pleasure speak their experience. Afterwards spoke a few words in English on the Parable of the "Virgins" – but it was not a very profitable season to me.

After our Native Service in the Evening we met together and according to the custom at home, we read the form of Covenant, and while so doing my soul was deeply affected humbled before the Lord yet enabled to lay hold on the Saviour. Surely words more appropriate could never be chosen for driving a sinner from every false refuge and leading him to Christ! We confirmed this covenant engagement with one God by receiving the emblems of the Saviours Body & Blood. It was to me a very solemn, profitable season. O may the Covenant I have again made with my God be ever kept in mind.

The year that has pas'd into Eternity was one of great Trial & change in my situation & circumstances, and of rather serious Personal & Family Affliction. But it is gone and Perhaps I have now entered upon the last Period of my earthly existence . Oh that I may so live & act that the welcome word "well done" may be mine at the last.

* Bro: Whiteley Baptized our little Daughter after the English service this afternoon. We have named her Eliza Sarah Hopkins.

[Page 53]

Jan: 1837

Thursday, 5th – Returned home last Evening from a visit to the Heads, Werinaki, Omanaia, &c. – was accompanied by Brother Whiteley & Mr. Hawke. We were pleased with our visit but wearied with our journey overland from Werinaki to the Waima River. Felt encouraged at the former place while addressing a few who listened with deep attention to the words of life through which they may be saved. On our arriving at home we were again distressed on hearing of the desperate movements of poor - W – during our absence. Fighting with a Poor Jew, and from accounts had engaged a number of our Christian Natives to assist him in taking his vessel from him, because he would not give up a Lamp which he had on Board that Mr – W – claimed as his. I never heard of such infuriated proceedings in my life before from a Christian Missionary. I found three Letters waiting for me – one from F- W-, the other two from – W- W- one of which was written in Native. Their Language, Spirit, and Design are awfully bad, but I leave him & his Proceedings to

the Sovereign Judge of All, Praying the Lord to have Mercy upon him & bring him to repentance.

Sat: 7th – Through Mercy I am brought to the close of the first week of another year. It has been a week of some Trial, but blessed be God of general Peace. I was blessed with very gracious feeling last Evening at our Class Meeting. Truly the Lord is good to me!

Sunday, 8th – Our Congregations were better today than we expected. I addressed them in the Morning on the Blind man coming to Jesus to have his eyes opened – and in the Evening on our Lord's coming to Judgment. The people were exceedingly attentive but I was not favoured with good liberty in speaking.

Bro: Whiteley was out at Mangamuka among the people there, and the English service was conducted by Bro: Woon. Lord sanctify me & my work to thyself.

[Page 54]

Sat: 14th – Have spent most of my time this week in attempting to compose some Hymns for our people to sing and have been considerably encouraged in my feeble efforts.

In mind have been grieved & exercised today with many of our Christian Natives, in the Disposition they manifest in cleaving to him whom they see & acknowledge has led them so much astray. The injury he has done especially of late, I fear will not soon be vindicated.

Sunday, 15th – Very poorly this Morning with cold, and did not rise in time to attend Native service. In the Evening we held a Lovefeast with the Natives, who for the first time were admitted by Tickets. More than three Hundred were present, some of whom spoke to the point, but others were not so satisfactory in their testimony. After they had occupied about two Hours, I took occasion to speak of myself to them at some length, shewing why I became a Missionary, and why I became such to them. I endeavoured to shew them that we had purely the interest of their Souls at heart, and challenged them at once to come forward if they had any thing against myself or Brethren, as Poor W had represented. All was deep attention, and there appeared some real searching of heart amongst them, but no one had to say we had done them wrong, or that they had ought against us: but on the Contrary strong feeling in our favour was manifested. My object was to counteract the false impressions made by him, who has done us so much wrong.

Sat: 21st – This has been to me a week of bodily labour in attempting to drain our yard, which is in a most wretched state in wet weather. The weather has been very hot most of the week. Yesterday the glass stood at 82 in the shade, and about 112 in the Sun, which in comparison of the state of the Mercury in general is high.

[Page 55]

Sunday, 22nd – Not as many at Chapel this Morning as usual. Bro: Whiteley preached from "Herod slaying J--- and Putting Peter in Prison &c., and I was led to take up the same subject in English in the Afternoon. Just as our English service concluded Messenger arrived from Mangamuka bringing the distressing intelligence that two of our Christian Natives had been shot Dead by a small tribe in their Neighbourhood to whom they had gone to instruct them in the truth of Christianity. We prepared & went up the River immediately to the place where the young men resided, and found the Report we had received correct with this exception, only one of the two were actually shot Dead, but the other was dangerously wounded – and

William Barton the Third had two Balls pas'd through his Blankett.
The circumstances of the case were these. This small Tribe consisting of ~~about~~ between twenty & thirty Persons at the Head of whom was a very ferocious Chief named Kaitoka (worm Eater) were living about three miles from the Body of our Christian Natives at Mangamuka in a worse state than that of heathen Darkness, for they had listened to a vile Impostor known by the name of Papabudikia, by whom they were instructed to oppose that which is good. The Devil they regard as their God. Our people had frequently visited them, but had been opposed in their attempts to do them good, and of late had been threatened if they did not desist, with Punishment. Unhappily however this had been kept from us as we might have prevented it. This Morning three young men went to talk to them as usual viz, Mathew, Rihimona, & William Barton. And as soon as they arrived at their residence, they took three Musketts, each loaded with two Balls, and deliberately shot two of them through their Body, but the

[Page 56]

Balls passed through William's Blanket without touching the Body. William is a Chief of the first rank and a very promising young Man. All was excitement when we arrived, and they manifested great anxiety to know our Mind as to what they should do. We saw at once that we were placed in trying circumstances in this Matter. We were aware it would not do to let these atrocious Murderers to go unpunished in some way, and yet if we advised them to go and put them to Death, that would certainly occasion a war which might cost the lives of many and involve us also in the estimation of the Friends of the Murderer. We saw there was a strong wish on the part of some of the Chiefs to take vengeance upon the Murderers immediately, but Christian principle operated with them. They wished not to act in direct opposition to ~~their~~ our views, still they wished those views to be in accordance with their own feelings. We endeavoured to ascertain the real cause of this Murder, and found that it was not purely out of opposition to Christian instruction, but from an original grudge respecting some land which they allege was taken from them by the Tribe to which these young Men belonged some time back. We endeavoured to shew them in what Spirit our Lord & his Disciples acted towards their Enemies when pursued unto death. They admitted the force of these things, but argued that if they allowed these Murderers to go unpunished, they and others of the same stamp would thereby be emboldened to greater crimes. We wished to suspend our judgment until Morning when all the leading Men would be assembled.

Mon: 23nd – After a few hours rest on the Chapel Floor we rose and joined with the people in their Morning Devotions, and then went out among the people.

[Page 57]

By ten Oclock at least five or six Hundred People had assembled, including all our Principal Chiefs who have embraced Christianity, and others who had not. Various speeches were made, some in favour of going against the offenders immediately, others opposed to it. The prevailing feeling was that redress should be sought by some other means than going to war. Bro: Whitely & I proposed to go in Company with two or three of the Chiefs to see the offenders, and by if we could affect a reconciliation in some way with them. This however was positively objected to by our people from a Conviction that if we went they would shoot us also. While we and the leading Chiefs were thus considering the subject, and at the moment we were hoping matters would soon be brought to a favourable termination, several young men stole away unperceived towards the Village of the Murderers and there fired off several Musketts. These being heard, some must needs go to see what was

the matter, supposing the Enemy were pursuing their murderous designs upon others. A few having gone others followed until all went. We now thought it right that we should go also to see whether we could affect anything upon the spot. We arrived at the spot before anything serious had taken place, but just we got within sight of their Pa which was simply a Trench Dug out of the Earth under which they could conceal themselves, and over which they could Fire upon their opposers. Just as we arrived abreast of the Pa, they fired the first shot upon our People. The Ball pas'd a little to the right of where I stood. A second & a third shot were immediately fired upon us, so that no opportunity offered

[Page 58]

for saying a word to them. After the third shot some of our People fired upon them – then the work of destruction commenced. One belonging to us was soon wounded, and another Person of Rank shot Dead. Now the Balls began to fly thick around us and as all hope of doing any thing as Mediators between them, we considered that we had no longer any business there, and so left them for home. After we had left them about an hour, we heard terrible firing, so that supposed the slaughter would be considerable. We returned home with melancholy feelings, and on our arrival found our wives under considerable apprehension for our safety.

Tues: 24 – Left home as soon as practicable to relieve the wounded of yesterday and to learn the present state of affairs. On going up the River we met the people returning, and found that after we had left them yesterday they stormed the Pa put twelve to Death and took the rest as Prisoners - Kaitoke himself was among the latter after having received a wound through his [indecipherable]. No more lives were lost among our people, but several were seriously wounded. We sent onward some medicine &c for the wounded that were left & returned home understanding that all were to come down tomorrow to Mangungu there to wait the arrival of Kaitoke's friends who were expected to come against them to avenge his Death -

Wed: 25th – All has been Apprehension and Bustle here today - Our People have been arriving from every quarter with their little all that was moveable, and placing themselves in a Posture of Defence against their expected enemies. Various Reports have been received respecting the Keetie Tribe from Wirinake down the River coming with a strong force against our People, but nothing as yet is definitely known.

[Page 59]

Thursday, 26th – All was expectation this Morning but nothing was definitely known until about ten O'clock when Pi, a powerful Chief from Waima arrived with a small party of his people in order to make peace. Our fears were now dissipated knowing that as he had taken up the matter in so friendly a manner nothing serious was to be apprehended from others. A great deal of speechifying in their way, firing, feasting &c &c afterwards took place.

Friday, 27th – The Wirinake & Pakonai Tribes having come up to a place within three Miles of our Settlement, we proposed to our Chiefs that we with two or three of ourselves should go over to them to know their intentions &c &c. On our arrival, by some of the Chiefs we were received in a friendly manner, by others the reverse. We were happy however to find that the leading men were disposed for Peace - After a good deal of conversation with them, it was agreed that Moetera, the Chief from the Heads & two of the Wirinake Chiefs should return with us in our Boat to settle the matter with our People, for this we were very thankful -

Several hours were spent in publicly talking the matter over, and finally making Peace. One thing appeared clear to us from their various speeches, viz: that the original cause of the murder was a Dispute about some land, (a Kauri Forest now in the Possession of Mr. White) though they made their opposition to Christian Instruction the ostensible cause.

How we hope this unhappy affair has been brought to a favourable termination - Seventeen lives have been lost and several more dangerously wounded. O the horrors of war!

We had a feeling time at our little Class this Evening. We saw much occasion of humiliation before God on our own Account & that of our People - At the same time we felt truly grateful for the more favourable circumstances in which we were found.

[Page 60]

Sat: 28th – A very busy day among the Natives, attending to their sick &c. Several are on the point of Death. Was much pleased with Apollas a Native Leader, just on the borders of Anuan. The Lord is with him passing thro the vale. He has strong confidence in Jesus, and leaves the world without fear or regret. This is one happy triumph of the Cross!

Sunday, 29th – The Congregation was very good this Morning. The house was too small to contain the numbers present. Bro: Whiteley addres'd them with freedom and feeling from "Jesus wept", from which he shewed them who Jesus was, why He wept, & for whom he wept. We afterwards met the Leaders & appointed fresh Leaders to Mathew's Class who was shot, & to Aporo's who is just entering the promised Land.

After Dinner I received a hasty Letter from Mrs. Mitchell informing us that a set of Ruffins had plundered one of her neighbours & threatened to rob her also. I informed our Chiefs, who with all the principal men were in their canoes and on their way towards the place in about fifteen Minutes. Bro: Whiteley & I with Mr. Hawke accompanied them up the River. We found Mrs. Mitchell with her Inmates in considerable fear, but no real injury had been done them. Two of the European Settlers however had been robbed of nearly all they Possessed. Our people pursued them up the River not knowing who they were nor from whence they came. We returned home bring with us two of the Females & several of the Children. We are now in a very unsettled state. The sound of war is heard on almost every hand, and we are somewhat fearful lest this Plundering party should lead our people into further trouble. But the Lord reigneth, and bids us trust in him!

[Page 61]

Feb: 1837

Monday 30th – This Morning we have four Deaths on the Station. Apollas, a [indecipherable] & excellent Leader who has left the world in the faith of the Gospel. Rihimona, one of the two who was shot on Sunday week, while endeavouring to instruct their Countrymen in the truths of the Gospel – he also I doubt not has safely arrived "where the wickedness can never come". The other two were children, one of whom was in health and at the Chapel last Evening. How uncertain our stay in this vale of tears! O to be found of him in peace!

Have been exceedingly busy, attending to the sick, and the calls of the friends of the Deceased relative to their interment &c &c. I feel that I have need of more strength both of Body & Mind to enable me to attend aright to the Multiplicity of things now dealing upon me. Lord strengthen & fit me for thy will!

February 1st – Our fears were dissipated by the arrival of our people this Evening,

concerning whom we had heard nothing since they went on Sunday. They went to the place from whence the Marauders came, but were not able to recover any of the stolen Property. A good understanding however was affected between them & the Leading men of the place. Good time at our Prayer Meeting. Thanks be to God!

Sat: 4th – All is still bustle and anxiety with our people about their wars. Various reports are in circulation, but the Lord reigneth and all I trust will be well. Letters have been received today from the Waimate bringing the painful intelligence of the Death of Mrs. Davies -The first Adult connected with the Mission since its formation. She was suddenly seized with Inflammation in the Bowels, and in less than two days was an Inhabitant of Eternity. But she has doubtless passed into Glory. Lord may I be ready!

[Page 62]

Sunday 5th – Chapel well filled, and my Soul was enlarged while I addressed them from “Behold I stand at the Door and knock &c” – and the truths delivered I hope found their way to their souls. Had a very good time in the Afternoon in English from “The rich Man & Lazarus”. We had several of our Countrymen present amongst whom was Cap. McDonnell. All listened with deep attention, and I have no doubt but the truth penetrated their hearts. I spoke with great plainness, fidelity & affection. O that God would Crown my feeble endeavours with success.

Saturday, 11th – Another week of Trial & Labour has passed into Eternity and I am still the living to Praise my God. But I have been unfaithful this week and have in some degree yielded to Temper and words that were not pleasing nor Profitable. I have many things concerned with my family, the work of the Mission &c to try my Spirits. Lord strengthen thou my weakness & bid me believe!

Sunday, 12th – Good congregation this Morning, but was not free in speaking to them - from Seventh of Mathw. was the subject to which I directed their attention. Dry season. Afterwards met two classes of Candidates some of whom spoke in a very pleasing manner, others however were not clear. Dry time at the English service. Mr. Butler spoke.

Monday, 13th – Accompanied by Mr. Hawke went up to Waihou to cut our wheat, but found it scarce worth our notice at all.

Tuesday, 14th – Set off for the Waimate to see poor Mr. Davies, suffering severely from the loss of the Partner of his Bosom. Though many arrived in safety, but might have

[Page 63]

been seriously injured my Horse fell and threw me over his head, but escaped uninjured. Our friends received me very kindly, and I spent a pleasant Evening in converse with them – Mr Davies I found very low, yet devoutly breathing after God [indecipherable] holiness – the Lord support him!

Thursday 16th – Returned home this evening When I arrived weary indeed with my journey – Found all well – praise God.

Sunday 19th – Wet morning – did not get out to Chapel this morning – Spoke in

English in the afternoon from "if ye seek me let these go their way &c" – and in the Evening with tolerable freedom from "Martha & Mary" – from which I endeavoured to urge upon the Natives the propriety of being industrious in their families like Martha as well as pious like Mary "sitting at the feet of Jesus". All listened with attention, and I hope with profit.

Wed. 22nd – accompanied Messrs Whitely & Stack down to the Heads this afternoon & had a pleasant & profitable trip had much conversation with my old friend Stack, who has been lost to our Mission through – W - but I hope he will be equally useful amongst our Church Brethren

Thurs. 23rd – returned from the Heads, and was most agreeably surprised to find that the Revd. Sam Marsden with his Daughter, together with the Revd Mr Wilkinson and his wife had arrived in the Vessel was saw coming in yesterday. Most gladly did we hail the arrival of our venerable old friend amongst us, and hope his coming will be made a great blessing to us and the cause in which we are engaged.

Sunday 26th – A very interesting Sabbath [indecipherable] I read Prayer & addressed the Natives from the "Rich Man & Lazarus" with good freedom – afterwards Mr Marsden gave an address in English which I interpreted

[Page 64]

March 1837

Poor old man his feelings all but completely overcame him which caused a most pleasing sensation throughout the congregation – Cap. Livesay with the Doctor & most of the men were present, and all appeared deeply interested with what they had seen and heard

After Dinner met the leaders &c – and spoke to them individually about their Soul – Most of them spoke in a most pleasing manner as to the state of their Souls.

At three Mr Snowden Preached to us in English a simple, plain, experimental Sermon from "Lord what wilt thou have me to do" - was quite affected with his venerable appearance, and the truly Pious feeling that breathed in all he said.

Another interesting Meeting in the Evening with the Natives – Bro. Woon conducted the service.

March 4th – Saturday. This has been a week of considerable bustle & exercise in consequence of our guests, but have spent some pleasing times hours with them – But these things I find are a tax upon my time preventing me from attending upon other objects.

Have received Letters from the Colony affording me great pleasure of mind. My Proceedings with White are viewed by my Brethren as perfectly consistent. It is pleasing to have the approbation of those we esteem, but much more so the approbation of Heaven. O for a stronger Manifestation of the favor of God.

Sunday, 5th – A very good day to me. Felt at home in addressing my Country Men in the afternoon, and was much blessed in the Evening at the Sacrament which was administered to us by our Venerable friend Mr Marsden. The softening Power of the Lord was among us. Oh for a heart to love my God supremely.

[Page 65]

March

Tuesday, 7th – Mr and Miss Marsden with the Revd. Mr Wilkinson wife & children left us for the Bay of Islands early this Morning – I accompanied them up the Waikato River, at the Head of which they were met by Messrs Kemp & Davies with a number of Natives to carry them over. May the Divine Blessing rest upon them, and upon his aged Servant especially and crown him at last with a triumphant Death!

Friday, 10th – Early this Morning we were alarmed with the Cry of Murder having been committed a little below our Settlement. I hastened to the spot and found the report awfully true. One of our people had been going out early to his labour carrying his young child on his back, when he was attacked by some dreadful assassin and literally cut to pieces with a Hatchet and his little baby scalped with the same weapon. The most horrible sight I ever witnessed. The Murder or Murders were supposed to be of the party that shot our two young Native Teachers a few weeks back, but this Evening they have ascertained it was done by slaves belonging to a tribe at Waima but for what reason no one at present knows. It has caused great alarm & excitement amongst all around us, and at first it was feared it would engender another war, but now we hope it will not be so. Alas! the wicked one still reigns dreadfully here. We had an encouraging time at our little Class Meeting this Evening. Cap: Livesay was with us and much broken down in Spirit.

Sat: 11th – A Day of Confusion and Trial to me and all is excitement among the Natives around us from the recent Murder &c &c. O that the Prince of Peace did but reign throughout the Land!

[Page 66]

Sunday, 12th – Pretty good attendance at Service this morning and I endeavoured to speak plain pointed things to them from the Ten Commandments but [indecipherable] feel that I am very defective in the language. I endeavoured especially to shew them the importance of paying attention to the fourth & fifth Commandments. In the afternoon felt hard work in speaking to our English attendance, but in the Evening had a most gracious season on board the Pyrimus on “Moses lifting up the Serpent in the Wilderness”

It is long since I felt so much at home in shewing poor sinners the way of Salvation through looking to Jesus.

Tues: 14th – Accompanied by Mr Hawke went to Waima at the particular desire of our Chief to endeavour to induce Pi the Chief of that place to give up the Murderer to be put to Death. On my arrival found that they had already executed vengeance upon him. He was taken by Moses one of our Christian Chiefs & bound, and then a message was sent to Pi to come and take him to Mangungee where the Murders were committed. It is very pleasing to know that our people engaged in Prayer with the poor Murderer while the Messenger was fetching the executioner to take him away. On Pi's arrival however, he declined taking him to Mangungee, but ordered his men to shoot him at once which was done, assigning as a reason that this was the second murder which had been committed by his people in a short time & that therefore he would execute vengeance upon him at once. It is remarkable that these two murderers are Brothers, Slaves. No just reason is assigned

[Page 67]

March

for the late atrocious Murders of Father & Child. The only thing that I could learn was that the Man had just had a serious quarrel with a woman who had formerly lived with him as a wife, but had for some time been living with a white Man. He sought to kill the Woman but was prevented, and in the greatness of his wicked rage, came over near our Settlement & committed the awful deed.

We were treated not only with respect but great kindness by Pi, and contrary to my intention he prevailed upon me to stop all night making the best Provision for us he could and allowed me to pray in his House Morning & Evening, although KaiToke & various opposers of religion. I felt much encouraged with my visit and am satisfied that we ought to have a missionary there.

Saturday, 18th – Thus am I brought to the close of another to me very trying week, so much so that I have been ready to wish myself in some more quiet and Peaceable land.

This Evening arrived on a visit from the Bay our old Friend Mr Stack with his wife & two children.

Sunday, 19th – Native congregations were but thin. Mr Stack addressed them Morning & Evening, and I believe in a very profitable manner.

At 11 A.M. I Preached on board the Pyramus with very good freedom from “Unto you is the word of this Salvation sent” – All were deeply attentive and the word appeared to produce effect. Heard Mr Buller in the Afternoon with pleasure and for the good of the Europeans about us I preached in English again at 7 in the Evening. A good many came from the Ship, and we had a solemn time.

[Page 68]

24th Good Friday. Preached on Board the Pyramus this afternoon & had a most attentive congregation to whom I spoke with freedom & affection from “For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust that he might bring us to God”. Heard Mr Stack address the Natives with great pleasure on the Crucifixion of our Redeemer and we had a most interesting Prayer Meeting afterwards at our House. The Lord gladdened our hearts.

Sunday, 26th – A stormy & uncomfortable Day. I was but as a Drone doing nothing. Mr Woon conducted the English, & Mr Stack the Native Services. I listened to him with real delight & profit. He is very fluent in the Language. The Lord bless his Labours!

April 1st Saturday. I am brought to the close of another week of bustle & Labour in tolerable health & peace. I have been at times much tried both from myself & others. Have laboured hard with my hands in endeavouring to get up our Fences & before winter sets in. We had a most affecting season last Evening at our little Class. The Lord was with us indeed.

Sunday 2nd – Not less than five hundred attended our Native Services today, they were addressed by Mr Stack with great freedom, plainness & faithfulness both Morning & Evening. I heard him with great pleasure. After Morning Service I gave tickets to three Classes, and to one after evening Service. But I was not upon the

whole so satisfied with the experience of the people as on former occasions. The Lord pour out his Spirit upon them & thoroughly convert their Souls! We had nearly 40 present at our English Service & never did I speak with greater freedom than on this occasion from "For the wages of Sin is Death &c" Some felt much.

[Page 69]

Sat: 8th – On Tuesday Morning Mr Stack & family from the Bay of Islands – Mrs Mitchell & family from the Heads to be in readiness for the sailing of the Brig for the Colony - Mrs Woon also set off this morning for Kuipan to attend Sister Wallis in her confinement. The Lord in Mercy bless them all with journeying mercies! I have been variously engaged meeting Classes for tickets &c &c – writing letters for the Colony, Visiting the Sick Making Roads &c

Sunday, 9th – Attendance thin today, most of our people remaining at their own settlements – Mr Woon was away meeting the people for Tickets at Mangamuka. Addressed them in the Morning from the Cananitish woman, and felt pretty well in my own mind. People very attentive. Mr Buller gave us a sermon out of the ordinary way from "Where their Worm dieth not", and considerable unction attended the word. Some appear to feel much. Heard Isaac a young Chief with considerable pleasure in the evening, and afterwards spoke a few words myself & prayed, and never felt better in Native. Praised be God this has been a good Sabbath to me! Was much encouraged from coming to the knowledge of the fact that one of the Sailors on board the Pyramus was brought to concern for his Soul the first Sermon I Preached on board that vessel.

Thursday, 10th – We had a blessed time last Evening at our Prayer Meeting. The Lord was truly precious! Cap: Young & Mrs Mitchell were up and spent the night with us. This Morning Widow Mitchell took her leave of us, tomorrow she expects to leave for the Colony in the Brig Nimrod. She as a Woman surpasses most I have met with in Domestic matters, and her acquaintance with us I hope has brought her to fear God.

[Page 70]

Have written and forwarded a number of Letters to my Brethren & Friends in both Colonies.

Sunday, 16th – Another profitable Sabbath to me. Preached on board the Pyramus at 11 A.M. from the "Prodigal Son", and the people were deeply attentive, and some of them evidently felt the subject for themselves. At Three I conducted our own little English Service and treated on the "Value of the Soul" – a most solemn time to me & I hope profitable to all present. Found it very profitable at the Native Service in the Evening. I spoke to the people with great freedom and was much drawn out in Prayer for them.

Sat: 22nd – Thus am I brought to the close of another bustling, trying week, and yet a week of mercy & goodness. The Revd. Wilkinson & family arrived from the Bay on Wednesday, and have been with us since. He is an agreeable man. The Lord was truly present with us at our little Prayer Meeting last Evening, quickening & refreshing our Souls.

Sunday 23rd – A noble attendance today, not less than seven hundred souls were on the Station. I addressed them with freedom in the Morning from the "Prodigal Son" and their Souls appeared to devour the word delivered.

In the Evening we had a most interesting Lovefeast five hundred at least were present. They spoke with freedom, and some of them with good effect. The Lord is evidently more fully Enlightening their minds.

We commenced a Sunday School today, and had about 150 Children, but we had some trouble to bring order out of confusion – but shall doubtless succeed in our endeavouring, and in this be made a blessing to many.

Saturday 29th – This has been a week of bodily Labour, but a week of Peace of mind. Blessed be God for my health & strength, but above all for my hope of happiness beyond the grave!

[Page 71]

Sunday, 30th – Our Native Congregations were comparatively thin today. I addressed them in the Morning from “I must work the works of him that sent me while it is day the night cometh when no man can work” but did not feel that freedom which is generally my happy portion. Addressed my Country Men in the Afternoon from “The good old way” – said some plain things, but was not free. Mr Buller made his first attempt in Public to address the natives, and got on far better than I expected. He has just been twelve months in the Land and his proficiency for the time is very encouraging. Should the Lord favour him with health and vigour He will become a very useful Man in this Mission.

Saturday, May 6th – This has been a week of hard and painful labour to me in Bricklaying. Have built a new Chimney which we much needed to our sitting room, and repaired two others.

My wife & several of my Children are very unwell with colds, but hope they will soon be better.

Sunday, 7th – Addressed the Natives both Morning & Evening with pretty good freedom from the “Parable of the Marriage of the King’s Son”. The attendance was good and their attention deeply rivetted to the truths delivered – O may the word be blest! After Morning service, Baptized 4 children and after the English Service in the afternoon Baptized the infant son of Mr and Mrs. Batts who had come up the River on purpose. Married two couples in the Evening. Rather barren Day.

I was painfully affected this Evening on hearing that Captain Crowe of the Brazil Packet was Drowned in our River, near the Heads, and it is supposed that he threw himself overboard on purpose to put a period to his miserable Early Career. This is another effect of that all destructive Sin of Drunkenness to which He had been much addicted of late.

[Page 72]

Sat: 13 – This has been a week of more than common exercise & solemn interest to me. Oh Monday Morning, I was sent for to visit Thos. Styles on the other Side of the River who I was informed had been taken seriously ill. I immediately went over and found him exceedingly ill, apparently of inflammation in the lower regions of the Bowells. Administered the most likely medicine to him and afterwards spoke to him at some length, with great plainness & affection as the great concerns of his Soul was much led out in Praying for him.

Visited poor Styles again twice on Tuesday and found him much worse. This most powerful medicine being quite powerless upon him. No Passage of any kind either for Urine or otherwise. Learned today from enquiry that his affliction originated in Drunkenness on Sabbath last. A number of our ungodly Countryman met together and Drank to Drunkenness & then quarrelled & fought. A Man by the name of Poynton struck Styles several times when He fell violently to the ground & was not able again to rise, but was obliged to be carried home in dreadful agony, in which He continued until He Died.

Wednesday. Visited him again today, as did Mr Buller also, but my hope of his recovery without a Miricle in his favor was gone. I talked most seriously & faithfully to him and those about him and then Prayed for him with much feeling for Myself and some present wept much & appeared deeply distressed in Soul. Knowing that he had spirits upon his premises, and that these cursed spirits had been the cause of his misery, I urged upon him the propriety of putting this evil from his Dwelling & thus give his ungodly companions a public proof that He sincerely repented of what he had done in thus being the cause of bringing

[Page 73]

so much misery upon himself & others. He heard me attentively & then called a young Man to go & stove in the head of the Cask in his store & let the remainder run out on the floor which was accordingly done. With this circumstance I felt much encouraged and hope it will have a good effect upon others.

Thursday – Went over again to see poor Styles, but found on my arrival that He had quitted this vale of tears before I arrived. Alas! Alas! his had been a rebellious career – but I dare not say he has not obtained mercy as for Mercy He was brought to cry aloud. After the Corpse was laid out I addressed the Europeans present at some length & Prayed fervently with & for them. Some cried very much, especially Poynton the Man who is said to have struck him & probably occasioned his death. O may this Dispensation be sanctified to all!

This afternoon his remains were brought over for interment in our Burying ground – and while in the Chapel before me I addressed the Europeans present (about 40 in number) at some length & with great plainness from “Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do &c” and then committed him to the silent grave.

We have had a happy contrast to this distressing case in the truly peaceful Death of the wife of our principal Chief Thos. Walker. She had been sickening for some time, but went off rather suddenly at last. Mr T visited her the night before she died (as I frequently done before) and found very feeble but very peaceful and happy – Jesus she said is my keeper &c &c” O yes! Death in her appeared all but enviable. Her happy Spirit took its flight to Paradise in the night of Tuesday and yesterday I committed her Body to the dust in our New Burying Ground. The first there entombed. O that my End may be peaceful like hers!

[Page 74]

My mind has been somewhat exercised this week about my children, several of whom are very unwell, my oldest Daughter especially, but she is somewhat better: but blessed be God I and mine are in the hands of him who cannot err. “My times are in thy hands.

Sunday 14th – A good day to me. We had a good and deeply attentive congregation

this morning, and I was enabled to address them with freedom from the 5th of Mathew, especially from "Ye are the salt of the Earth &c" and the Divine Spirit evidently applied the truths to their judgment & conscience.

Addressed my country-men in the afternoon from "The way of Life is above to the wise, that He may depart from Hell beneath." Two or three Strangers were present and the plain truths delivered appeared to go home. My Soul is more fully drawn out after Sinners and at this time after my country-men in particular and by the blessing of Heaven I mean to try to do them good. Oh may my feeble efforts be crowned with success!

Wed: 17th – Yesterday Brother & Sister Woon returned from Kaipara where Sister W had been attending Sister Wallis during her confinement. We were glad to see them back, and thank our God for favouring them with journeying mercies.

We had a most blessed Prayer Meeting this Evening under my roof. The Power of God was felt by all present. Two strangers wept aloud, and I hope their convictions will not soon wear away.

Sat: 20th – Yesterday we committed to the Dust what the Fishes had left of the Body of Wm. Crow, Commander of the Brazil Packet – Drowned in this River, but it is feared in a very unprepared state. He was an awfully wicked man, and He has met with an awful end. Oh may I be ready!

[Page 75]

May – 1837

Sunday, 21st – A profitable Sabbath to my Soul. The Lord was present with us in the Ordinances of his House. I spoke with great plainness to my countrymen in the Afternoon from "See that ye refuse not him that speaketh &c" and some evidently felt the truth. Lord bless thy word! I was favoured with freedom of soul & speech in the Evening while addressing the Natives on "Jesus beholding Nathaniel under the Fig Tree".

Sat: 27th – Have been poorly in Body this week but quickened in Spirit – O what blessed Seasons our Prayer & Class Meetings have been. We all appeared near the Heaven of perfect love. Oh to be filled with God!

Bro: Woon & I spent most of yesterday amongst our countrymen up the Mangamuka, and we have arranged to have a regular English service with them once a fortnight. All have promised to attend.

Sunday, 28th – A wet uncomfortable day – addressed the Natives in the Morning with good freedom from the "History of Cain & Able", dwelling on "The voice of thy Brother's blood crieth unto me from the ground".

Bro: Woon spoke to us in English from "Behold he prayeth" and the Evening I spent profitably with my family.

Sat: June, 3rd – A week of much rain – some trials from affliction in my family, and from the severe affliction of Bro: Woon's youngest child, but through mercy it is now somewhat better.

Thursday went up the Mangamuka by appointment to address my Countrymen residing there, but on account of the rain & other circumstances but few attended to whom I spoke from in the house of a Catholic "At the times of this ignorance God winked at".

We had another blessed manifestation of the Lord's goodness to us at our Prayer Meeting on Wednesday Evng. and again at our Class on Friday Evng. Glory to God!

[Page 76]

June – 1837

Sunday 4th – Had an interesting meeting this morning up the Waihou with a Tribe who have not hitherto embraced Religion. Two of the principal Chiefs were present and heard with attention and I hope it will be the means of leading them to turn from their superstitious ways. I also got together several of my Countrymen, talked to and Prayer with and made arrangements for meeting them once a fortnight to hold a service with them. O that the Lord may bless my feeble efforts and give me Souls for my [indecipherable]. Spoke to our people in the Evening with good freedom, and afterwards heard Mr. Stephenson in English with good feeling from “And the ransom’d of the Lord shall return and come to Zion &c &c”.

Sat: 10th – Have laboured hard this week with my hands at various things in getting our roads &c a little more straight & clean – and yesterday and today have been devoted to building Mr. Woon a Chimney to his Kitchen. Though I have laboured hard my frame has been suffering a good deal from cold. Several of my family also are poorly. O that I may in all things labour with a single eye, and offer all my works to my God alone!

Sunday, 11th – Had good freedom this morning in addressing the Natives from “Were there not ten cleansed but where are the nine &c”. The Congregation was good and deeply attentive, and I hope they were profited by what they heard. Spoke with great plainness & freedom in English at three from “Prisoners of hope” and some appeared to feel the importance of what they heard. Spent the Evening very profitably with my family and I hope to their advantage also.

[Page 77]

1837 – June

Thurs: 15th – Arrived this Evening from Sydney the Brig Nimroa and in her Masters Edward Williams and Henry Kemp, sons of our Church Missionry friends who are returning from England to their Parents. Young Williams appears a most promising young man and I hope will be a blessing in his day.

Letters from the Colony have come to hand, also some few Periodicals from home, but nothing of very deep interest to us.

Tidings from the seat of War in the Bay are of a very painful character. Pi one of our principal Chiefs (though not a Christian) from Waima is shot dead with nine or ten others. This is likely to cause a general move amongst our people, though I hope not for war but Peace.

My health & Mrs. Turner’s also has been very indifferent this week with very troublesome coughs.

Sunday, 18th – Mr. Woon conducted the Native Service this morning, and I the English in the afternoon and was favoured with freedom & feeling while speaking from “Comfort ye, comfort ye my people saith your God” – and the word was evidently with Power to some present. Was much interested in the Evening from hearing Master Williams address the Natives – Arising from a conversation we had had with the principal Chiefs after the Morning service on the subject of attempting to bring about a reconciliation between the contending Tribes in the Bay. He took for his text “Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called the Children of God” – and his remarks were very much indeed to the point. All listened with the deepest

attention, and appeared quite interested. May our heavenly Master call this young Man into his vineyard & make him an abundant blessing!!

[Page 78]

Sat: 24th – A week of suffering to myself, wife & several of the Children from severe colds, but some of us are a little better.

Our people are still under considerable excitement from the Death of Pi &c whose Body has been brought over to be interred according to the New Zealand custom. His people are disposed to avenge his Death, but our Christian Natives are very wishful for Peace, though some of them stand nearly related to him and others who have fallen in the war.

Sunday, 25th – The weather being unfavourable I spent my Sabbath in reading at home.

July 8th Sat: Bro: Whitely & I returned from the Bay of Islands this afternoon having been ten days from my family. We went over with our people and at their particular request to make peace if possible with or rather between the contending tribes, and I hope our visit has not been in vain though matters were far from being settled when we left, but arising from their tardy movements &c we could not think of remaining longer from our families. I thank my heavenly Father for his great goodness to me & mine during our separation. My own health is improved & my wife & children I have found better than I left them.

Sunday: 9th – Spent a comfortable Sabbath at Mangunga and was pleased to find that notwithstanding the number of our people over at the Bay we had a pretty good congregation to whom I spoke with freedom from “Ye were once darkness but now are ye light in the Lord &c”. All was deep attention to what was said. In the afternoon addressed my Countrymen from “My sheep hear my voice &c” and found it profitable to my own Soul, and hope others were likewise profited. Mr. Stephenson from Kaipara gave us a very profitable Sermon this Evening.

[Page 79]

July – 1837

Sat: 15th – This has been a week of hard labour assisted by my Brethren and the Natives in sewing and covering in our wheat – and if favoured with a crop shall have as much another year as will supply us with bread. Accompanied Mr. Stephenson and my Daughter went down to the Heads this Evening to spend the Sabbath with our friends there.

Sunday, 16th – Spent a very agreeable day with Bro: Whiteley & his people. Spoke twice in Native and to a few at Cap: Youngs in English in the afternoon. The Native congregations were but small, many of the people being from home but was rejoiced to find that the Lord is working among them. Near one Hundred are beginning to meet in class. Praise the Lord for what is doing.

Sat: 22nd – This week has principally been devoted to gardening, and have been obliged to labour myself with the Natives, the ground being new & uneven required my attention to level and lay it out. In these secular engagements I find great need of much watchfulness & Prayer that they may not secularize my Soul.

Sunday, 23rd – Congregation not so good as usual. Before morning Service gave

tickets to three Classes & then Preached to the Natives from "Neither give place to the Devil" – all was deep attention, but was not much at liberty. Gave Tickets to another Class after Dinner & then conducted our little English Service and while speaking from "But know that the Lord hath set apart him that is godly for himself the Lord will hear me when I call upon him". My own Soul was quickened, comforted & blest. Praise the Lord.

Oh how refreshing are the Ordinances of God's house when the Soul enters within the veil and worships him in the beauty of holiness! May I dwell in the house of the Lord forever! Amen!

[Page 80]

July

Sat.: 29 – A very, cold uncomfortable week, but it has afforded me opportunity for writing to the Comee. &c – but a good part of my time this week I have spent with great pleasure to myself in translating an excellent Tract out of the Tonga into the Language of this people – one which if we can get through the Press will doubtless be of great good to this ignorant people. My soul has this week been refreshed in our little meetings among ourselves. Thank God for social intercourse!

Sunday, 30th – Another Sabbath has passed away, but I hope not without some good to the received & communicated to others by the blessing of God. Addressed the Natives this Morning from "It is appointed for Men once to die, but after that the Judgment" – and the solemn truths delivered were felt I trust both by speaker and Hearers.

Bro: Woon took the English Service & also the Native in the Evening.

Saturday, Aug: 5th – Thus by the continued goodness of my God am I brought to the beginning of another month and to the close another week. Have felt more than common interest in my work this week. Bro: Whitely and his family came up on Wednesday to spend the day or two with us, but the weather has kept them here, and this has given me an opportunity of profiting by his superior knowledge of the Language. Have finished the Translation of a very useful Tract from the Tonga Dialect, which will soon be got through the Press, and I have no doubt be made an everlasting blessing unto thousands in this benighted Land.

God has graciously visited our Souls this week in our little English service with each other, and this Evening my soul has been truly refreshed in addressing the Natives from "If man canst but believe, all things are possible to him that believeth". May the gracious Lord [indecipherable] with his blessing the word of his truth!

[Page 81]

August – 1837

Sunday, 6th – One of the best Sabbaths for spiritual feeling that I have enjoyed in New Zealand. Attended the Native Prayer Meeting at 7 A.M. – about 150 present, and several prayed with considerable feeling & Propriety. At 11 conducted the Native Service, and had great freedom of Soul while speaking from "For me to live is Christ, and to die is gain". The congregation was good and appeared deeply interested.

In the afternoon Preached in English from "Let us come with boldness to the Throne of grace &c" – and never did I see the way of faith more clearly – a good time!! Spent the Evening with my family & with the sick.

Wed: 9th – Were much surprised and distress'd this Evening on receiving Letters from Bro: Watkin of the Tonga Mission now in the Bay of Islands on his way to the Colony & we supposed to England, but why or wherefore we cannot tell – and therefore fear from his total silence upon the subject that something bad has transpired which has led to his sudden removal. My heart cleaves to that Mission, and am therefore distress'd that one whose Talents even so well adapted for usefulness amongst that people should have to leave them – “But the Lord reigneth”. Other intelligence from the Islands is both pleasing and painful. The enemies of the Cross in Tonga have made war upon the Christians, but the Lord has brought his people off victorious – Glory to his Name!

Sat: 12th – Have had a good deal of exercise these three last days arising from information received from the Islands on which I have been obliged to write to our Comee. at home. O how liable are good men to err! Lord save me to the end! Blessed meeting at our Class last Evening, and an interesting meeting with the Natives this Evening. Have fixed upon a general Baptism to be held a fortnight hence. O for the Baptism of the Holy Spirit upon the Natives & myself also!

[Page 82]

August

Sunday, 13th – A profitable Sabbath to me – the Native Prayer Meeting was well attended near 200 present at 7 A.M. At 11 I addressed them with good freedom from our Lord feeding “The five thousand with the five Loaves & two fishes”. In the afternoon we met a considerable number of Candidates for Baptism. Heard their experience & gave them advice. Bro: Buller gave us an excellent Sermon in English from “And there is a friend that sticketh closer than a Brother”.

Sat. 19 – A week of deep exercise of mind, but thank the Lord at the close of the same my mind is serene & happy.

Sunday, 20th – A good Day. Congregations large and attentive but being poorly – only spoke in English in the afternoon and gave the Natives an exhortation after the Evening service. Had many Candidates for Baptism present.

Saturday 26th – A week of more than common interest with our people as preparation to their Baptism tomorrow. The greater part of them were present last Evening and I found it a most interesting season to my own Soul. Was enabled to address them with great freedom and all appeared to feel the solemn engagement into which they were about enter. This has been a very busy day in filing the new names of the Candidates &c &c and this Evening the Chapel was quite full and all appeared deeply interested while I spoke to them with freedom and feeling, especially the Candidates. We afterwards married about twenty Couples of those to be Baptized tomorrow. Thank the Lord for the great encouragement he is giving us in our work! Letters, Papers, Magazines &c &c received this afternoon by way of the Bay of Islands from Sydney and England – also a small Case of Books from the “Religious Tract Society” – A present to the Mission for the use of the Missionaries Children. May the blessing of Heaven rest upon that very useful Society!

[Page 83]

Aug: - 1837

Sunday 27 – The best Day we have had in New Zealand. Attended the Native

Prayer Meeting at 7 A.M. when full three Hundred were present. Several engaged in Prayer & adres'd the Almighty with fervor, feeling and great Propriety. It was a pleasing sight, and Soul refreshing to be there.

Soon after Nine we met the Candidates, and I again adres'd & catechised them, solemnly charging them not to come to the Sacred Ordinance of Baptism any one of them if indulging in any secret or open Sin. It was a solemn Season! A little before Eleven the Candidates were first admitted into Chapel and arranged so as to occasion no Confusion in the Congregation at the time of administering the Ordinance. Afterwards the Bell was rung for the people to assemble, and the chapel was soon Crowded to excess and very many could not find admittance, but the Day was exceedingly fine for their sitting outside. My Soul was truly exhilarated on witnessing such an Assembly. After singing & reading part of the Morning service in which all appeared devoutly to join, I read the third of ~~Joh~~ Mathew's Gospel in the Native tongue, selecting for my text the 11th verse, especially the latter part pressing upon the Candidates the importance & absolute necessity of the Baptism of the Holy Ghost in order to their true Discipleship here and admission into Heaven hereafter. I was never before favoured with greater freedom in speaking in the Native tongue and though there must have been full 700 present every Countenance appeared set and every one deeply riveted to the truths delivered. There was considerable feeling in the Congregation, especially when the Candidates arose & stood before the Congregation, and the leading Chiefs were adres'd by Name, calling

[Page 84]

them to behold their Children & People now to be presented to the Lord. The questions having been proposed to and answered by the Candidates Bro: Woon & I formally introduced into the visible Church 129 Souls, Baptizing them in the Name of the Sacred, Triune Jehovah.

These were of all ages, from the youth of twelve years old, and up to the man venerable with hoary hairs. They were also of every Grade in New Zealand Society, from the home born Slave or Captive taken in War, up to Chiefs of the first Rank. The greatest Order and Decorum prevailed, such as I never expected to witness amongst the Untutored, Degraded, Cannibal New Zealanders. What hath God wrought! Glory, glory be to his holy Name!

A considerably greater number would have been baptized but we have been exceedingly pressing upon our Native Leaders & Chiefs not on any account to consent to one being brought forward who did not give them satisfactory proof of their sincerity; and nothing connected with this general Baptism has given us greater pleasure than the Scrupulous care manifested by those who had the general oversight of them that no one whose conduct had been at all improper should be brought forward; in consequence of which many yet remain as Candidates.

Bro: Buller gave us a good Sermon in English in the Afternoon – And Bro: Woon Preached to the Natives again in the Evening, pressing them from Pauls words “To present their Bodies & Souls a living Sacrifice unto God” – Chapel very full – after Sermon we Baptized 26 Children and Married 4 Couples.

We & our wives closed this Labourious, but delightful Day in Partaking the Lord's Supper together at Bro: Woons. A melting season! Retired to rest very weary.

[Page 85]

Sep: 1837

Sat: 2nd – This has been a painfully trying week to me arising from various causes, but principally from myself in giving way to undue warmth of Temper and unguarded expressions by which the Spirit of God has been grieved, and darkness spread over

my mind – I have longed to go out a visiting our people at their different settlements but the weather has not allowed and my frame is too feeble to be exposed to much rain.

Sunday, 3rd – Visited a small tribe on the other side the River this morning but found only a few at home and they not disposed to attend to the Salvation of their souls. Returned to Mangungu in time to address the people Mr. Buller having read Prayers – Spoke to them on the Flood by which the world was drowned, but principally from “Come thou & all thy house with thee into the Ark”, but was not favoured with liberty of Soul or Speech.

In the afternoon addres’d my Countrymen from “There is now no condemnation to them that are in Christ Jesus &c” and found it profitable to my own Soul – Spent the Evening in reading & found much profit in “Grindred’s Lecture on Salvation by faith” in one of our Magazines just received.

Sat: 9th – A week of very wet uncomfortable weather and my mind has been unusually gloomy, partly arising from the weak nervous state of my Body, and partly from spiritual causes – Trials from without & conflicts from within. Was favoured with a profitable time on Thursday afternoon in addressing some of my Countrymen up the Mangamuka on the “Rich Man & Lazarus”. Went down to Pakonai this Evening to spend the Sabbath with Bro: Whiteley among his people. Found all well.

Sunday, 10th – After Breakfast walked with Bro: Whitely to Pakonai Village but did not find many people, had a short service however with a few, several of whom afterwards returned with us to the Public Service. Many of the people being away at their Plantations our Congregation

[Page 86]

was but small, perhaps about Sixty – I addres’d them from “If thou canst but believe, all things are possible &c” but did not feel so free as I sometimes do – all were very attentive.

After Dinner we crossed the River to a small village where the people are still in heathenish night, a few however gave us an attentive hearing, and I hope this Tribe will soon be added to the number of those who believe. On our return I addres’d a few in English on “The Rich Man & Lazarus” and thus ended the labour of this Sabbath to me – and being poorly I felt considerably wearied with my work.

Sat: 16th – A Barren week to my Soul, and one of weariness & exercise to the Body – nearly all around us are sick with Influenza. Our Domesticals nearly all laid up, and ourselves also very poorly. Many of the poor natives are in a wretched state – afflicted, scarcely anything to eat, and almost naked, and our means for affording them relief are very scanty except in Medicines.

Sunday, 17th – Conducted the Native Service this morning but did not feel much at home. Endeavoured to comfort the minds of the people in their present affliction by shewing them how Christ continues to feel for his suffering Children now as he did for his sorrowing Disciples of old; and by directing their attention to that happy world where all their sufferings end forever.

While in service this morning a large vessel the “John Barry” came up the River and shortly after the Doctor & three of her Passengers came up to the Settlement and spent the afternoon with us. Mr. Buller conducted the English service, but with some of the remarks in his Sermon I was not pleased regarding them as calculated to do harm. Attended the Evening service and heard Mr. Woon, but it was to me a barren

season.

My soul needs quickening from on high - O blessed God, stir me up to take hold of thy strength.

[Page 87]

Sep. – 1837

Sat: 23rd – This has been a week of affliction to myself & family, and to nearly every one around us. The Influenza continues to prevail & many are suffering much. Two women of Rank amongst us have this week passed into Eternity, and are I believe enthroned at right hand of the Almighty. One of them was Married to an English Man. She left the world in a very pleasing manner – Her relatives & friends appear to sorrow much, but religion has done much for them in preventing that wild distress which was always exhibited on these occasions while in their heathen state.

Sunday, 24th – In consequence of the Affliction of our people our Congregation was but thin this Morning. After Bro: Woon had read Prayers, I adres'd them "Teach me to know the number of my days &c", and the word delivered appeared to make solemn impression upon the minds of all present. After Dinner I committed to the Dust the remains of two of our people – Aunt & Niece, both buried in one Grave agreeable to the wish of the Relatives – a solemn time to my own Mind.

Had a pleasing little congregation in English this afternoon to whom I spoke with freedom from "The Lord God is a Sun and Shield &c".

The Evening was spent among the sick, and I retired to rest with a wearied Body.

Wed: 27 – Returned from Mangamuka this Evening where I have been accompanied by Mr. Buller visiting & relieving our sick people. Visited three settlements & administered medicine to upwards of forty Persons, Sixteen of whom I bled. My Soul was truly distres'd in beholding so much suffering, but hope by the blessing of heaven upon the means most if not all will recover.

[Page 88]

Thursday, 28th – Committed to the Dust the Mortal Remains of Ane Patene (Ann Barton) Daughter & only Child of our principal Chief, Thomas Walker Name. She has for some time been sinking of a consumption. I have not felt so great anxiety for the restoration of any Native as for her, but the Lord has seen good to remove her hence, and I doubt not but her Spirit has overtaken that of her Pious Mother in the Skies who left the world about 6 months ago. She was a fine young Woman, and lately Married to a young Chief of great Promise amongst us. "A flower cut off in the midst of its bloom". Oh how uncertain is human life! Lord save me!

Sat: 30th – Accompanied my wife, Mrs. Woon and four of our Children down to Pakona yesterday to see Bro: & Sister Whiteley, and today we returned. Our passage down proved wet & uncomfortable, but very pleasant back, and I hope our little trip has not been unprofitable.

I thank the Lord most of the people around us are getting better & trust health will soon be restored amongst us. O for a closer walk with God!

Oct: 1st, Sunday – Had a very attentive congregation this morning on Board the "John Barry" to whom I spoke with freedom on "Moses lifting up the Serpent in the Wilderness &c", and in the Afternoon I Preached again in English from the ability of Christ to "Save to the uttermost". It was a profitable season to my own Soul.

Sat: 7th – A busy week in my accounts & preparing for our District Meeting. Some trials but they are gone. Good time at our Class last Evening. Mr. Stack is paying us a visit.

Have received Letters & favours from friends in Launceston. They have gladdened my heart. Praise the Lord for his Goodness.

[Page 89]

Oct: - 1837

Sunday 8th – Preached with good freedom this morning on Board the “John Barry” to near fifty Europeans from “Godliness is profitable unto all things &c”. All were deeply attentive and the truth appeared to carry conviction to every breast. Oh that it may be abiding!

Preached again in English in the afternoon from the “Canaanitish Woman” but was not free. Afterwards Baptized Mr. F. White’s Child.

Heard Mr. Stack address the Natives in the Evening with considerable pleasure & effect.

Sat: 14th – The Brethren having arrived we commenced our District Meeting on Thursday Morning and have spent three most agreeable days together but have not yet brought our business to a close.

Sunday, 15th – Heard Bro: Wallis address the Natives with great pleasure this morning from “But now comandeth all men every where to repent &c”. The Chapel was very full and a very solemn impression seemed to be made upon every one present. After Sermon I Baptized Raumate & his Wife – now John and Charlotte King. It was an affecting time. Raumate has long stood aloof arising out of disagreement with my predecessor. But of late he & his wife have given us most satisfactory proof of a decided change. The Cap: of the John Barry with Mrs. Robson, the Doctor & other Passengers were present, and appeared deeply interested with what they saw and heard.

Bro: Wallis gave us an admirable Sermon in English in the Afternoon from “Bring my Soul out of Prison that I may praise thy name” – a better Sermon I have not for a long time heard – and our little room was well filled with attentive hearers.

Bro: Whiteley came up in time and gave us the best Sermon I ever heard in Native

[Page 90]

from “Glorify God with your Bodies & Souls which are his”. O that the blessing of Heaven may rest upon the word of his grace!

After Sermon we administered the Sacrament to I judge about two Hundred of our people, who approached the Table with becoming reverence and many denst not approach from a conciousness of their Sin and unworthiness. It was a solemn & feeling time, though to me not so much so as I had expected.

Monday, 16th – Met some of our people early this morning to talk to them about their temporal interests and especially to urge them to form a regular village adjoining the Mission Premises &c &c but was grieved that our advice was not received as it ought to have been.

Closed our District business this Evening, and am thankful to the Almighty that we have been of one heart & mind in all that has come before us.

Wednesday, 18th – Yesterday my Brethren Whiteley & Wallis accompanied me to Waima to fix upon a suitable spot for a Mission Station and we could not but feel

something like astonishment on our arrival to find that the very place that had long appeared to me as the most desirable was the only one the Chiefs were willing for us to have. A leading Chief by the name of Neoka strongly objected to any being disposed of to us on the ground of our Church Misy. friends having purchased up all or nearly all the Land at one of their Stations (the Waimate) and driven the Natives away. But having shewn him that we had no such Farming objects in view, and that we only wanted so much as was just necessary for Misy. purposes He consented. The Brethren returned home today.

[Page 91]

Oct: 1837

Sat: 21st – Visited Waima again yesterday (accompanied by Mr. Buller & Dr. Towell & four of my Children) for the purpose of settling for the Land in which I succeeded to my satisfaction, and regard it as one of the most beautiful situations that could be and affording every requisite for a Mission Station.

My mind has been very uneasy for several days but tonight feel my peace is restored. My poor feeble Body has suffered much from spasms in the Chest during the last three weeks, but hope I am a little better, and my poor wife has been entirely laid aside for the last 10 Days but is now slowly recovering – O for a heart resigned!

Sunday, 22nd – Addres'd the Natives this morning with tolerable freedom from the former part of the 8th of Romans, especially from "The Spirit itself beareth witness with our Spirits that we are the children of God". But alas I found it very difficult to find words in the language fully to express my thoughts on this imp. point. Heard Mr. Buller in the afternoon from "It is appointed unto men once to Die" but he was [indecipherable] & dry. My Soul has not fed on marrow and fat things today as it frequently does, and my Body has been very poorly.

Sat. 28th – Close at my accounts &c most of this week, and also writing Letters to dear friends in Lamerton who have shewn me no little kindness. Have been very much pleased with the Spirit of enquiry manifested by the Natives during this week. The Lord is evidently stirring them up to think more fully about their own interests & those around them.

Had good freedom in addressing them this Evening from the 10th of Romans shewing them the way of Salvation through faith in the Lord Jesus.

[Page 92]

Novr.

Sunday, 29th – Preached on Board the John Barry this morning from the Prodigal Son. The people heard with attention & some seemed to feel, but ah some of them resolved to wander still further from their Father's House for they got a Canoe in the Afternoon to take a trip up the River, and having first procured Spirits from an ungodly settler with which they were nearly intoxicated. Their Canoe upset and one of the four was Drowned. Poor Man!

Preached again in English in the Afternoon and had a pretty good time – and in the Evening my heart was well affected while I addres'd the Natives, and especially some who are about to return to their own Places to the Southward.

Sat: Novr. 4th – This has been a week of great exercise & feeling to me. A party have arrived from the Southward again to beg of us to return among them in the Waikato District. After hearing their statements as to what the Lord is doing among them,

their anxiety that we should take them again under our charge; and seeing that the Door has been left perfectly open for our Church Mission Friends and they have neglected to enter, we have determined to take the people under our charge again, and shall send them Native Teachers until the mind of our Comee. is known. We have written the C.B. to this effect. May the gracious Lord direct our steps in this matter.

Baron de Therrie & his party have this day arrived in the River, and I fear his coming will be attended with very considerable excitement, and evil among our Natives, for they will not give up the Land unto which he lays claim. But God can turn to foolishness the Counsel of Ahithophel. Oh that his Arm may be made bare in our behalf!

[Page 93]

Novr. 1837

Sat: 11 – This has been a week of great exercise to me, principally on account of the arrival of Baron de Therrie &c – having had to act as Interpreter & Mediation between him & the Natives; but I have been enabled so to act as to keep my Conscience clear. Thos. Walker Nene our principal Chief has acted nobly towards him: when he could not make good his claims to the Land said to be bought for him many years ago by Mr. Kendal one of the Church Missionaries, he generously gave him a large Tract of excellent Land in consideration of his having been thus brought to land by deception. Tauhui, another Chief concerned has given a considerable portion also.

The Baron although a Gentleman I fear will prove no real benefit to the New Zealanders. His schemes poor Man are as Airy as they are lofty, and will come I fear to worse than nothing. Suspicions are entertained that he is a real Swindler, and has made his way here to avoid his Creditors – Poor Man I feel sorry for him, being fully persuaded he will be brought to trouble here.

On Wednesday Bro: Wallis arrived from Kaipara to arrange about his journey to Waikato – we have agreed that he shall go forthwith, and Mr. & Mrs. Buller proceed to Kaipara to remain with Mrs. Wallis until he returns. O that the Lord may guide his steps aright and make him a blessing to the people!

Sunday, 12th – By the wish of the Baron I preached for him & his people this morning at the Horeke his temporary abode. Some of his people it turned out are Catholics and refused to attend. A good many however were present and listened very attentively while I addres'd them "Jabez's Prayer" from which I was enabled to say some plain things to them. Among others I assured them that unless like

[Page 94]

Jabez they acknowledged the God of Isreal, and sought counsel & help at his hand, their schemes would be blasted and disappointment & woe would attend them. The Baroness was deeply affected and wept much. I hope my feeble effort to these adventurers will not be lost.

Heard Bro: Buller in the afternoon, and in the Evening by appointment Preached on Board the "John Barry" to a good & deeply attentive congregation. The Cap: of the "Earl Dunmore" was present. I had a good time in addressing them from "The Mighty God even the Lord hath spoken &c". They being ready to put to sea led me to speak more pointedly to them, and to urge them to labour to meet me in peace at that awful Day to which the text had reference. May they and I be saved in the Day of the Lord Jesus!

Friday, 17th – On Monday Morning Mr. & Mrs. Buller left us for Kaipara for a season –

And on Wednesday Evening Bro: & Sister Whiteley came up with their children to spend a day or two with us. And on Friday Morning Bro: Whitely & I set off on Tour to the Eastern side of the Island to visit several places where through the influence of our Native Teachers the people have begun to worship God. By 7 P.M. we arrived at the foot of Mount Taniwa where we encamped for the Night. Here former Travellers had rested also & left a shed or break wind in which we resolved to spend the night. Our Native Lads soon improved our temporary Lodging by putting additional thatch upon it to keep out the wind that was blowing fresh, and having a good fire on the side that was open we were tolerably comfortable. A cup of Tea refreshed us much and having read & Prayed with our Natives we wrapped us in our Blankets and laid down to rest. Though our Bed was by no means downy I slept soundly until 4 A.M. when the Day began to break.

[Page 95]

Nov: 1837

A fine we commenced our Journey, and in half an hour we were on the summit of Mount Taniwa where I had one of the most delightful & commanding prospects I ever beheld. This Mount is a perfect Cone standing in the Centre of a range of loft Hills near midway between the Eastern & Western Coasts and commands a view of both all round the North Cape: but we ascended rather too soon as the fog had not cleared away from some of the Vallies and consequently obstructed our view. Having feasted our eyes for about half an hour we descend on the other side our road lying in that direction. After travelling hard over Hills & Dales & Rivers for about four hours we arrived at the first Native Settlement in the Hodudu Valley - About thirty or forty people in a very sequestered but lovely spot. We found them at work planting Kumeras & Indian Corn: they soon left their work and gathered around us. We collected them together under some shady Bushes where we had a regular service with them. Bro: Whiteley addres'd them and all were very attentive. A few of them have begun to worship the Lord Jehovah and a young Man by the name of Mathew whom I Baptized about 12 months ago acts as Teacher; he appears a very steady, promising youth. We left some School Books with him & urged upon all to learn to read the word of God &c. After having had a little refreshment we travelled on to the Settlement of a Chief lately baptized by the name Hohipa Otane (Joseph Orton) after Bro: Orton at Hobart Town and in about two hours arrived by which time I was well tired, not having walked so many miles in one day for many years. After having had a good wash and a cup of Tea we felt much refreshed, and

[Page 96]

then spent about two hours in looking about the Settlement & talking to the people. With the place I was much pleased the soil is rich & the scenery delightful; and for the number of inhabitants they have more land in cultivation than I ever saw in New Zealand before. Were the Natives more numerous it would be a delightful spot for a Mission Station. The people are longing for a Missy. to come & live among them. About six we collected the people together about 90 in number & had a service with them to whom I spoke at some length from "The Ethiopian Eunuch" and all were very attentive. We made ourselves a bed of Fern in the Verandah of the Chief's Cottage, and slept soundly until about four O'clock.

Sunday, 19th – Hodudu. At five O'clock the Natives again assembled when I read Prayers and Bro: Whitely Preached them a good Sermon on the New Birth, unto which all listened with fixed attention. As soon as the service was over we set off for Kohu Madu, where we hoped to have reached in two hours but it took us near four

hard travelling, and we found it one of the most hilly parts over which we had passed. It rained slightly all way and before we arrived began to fall very heavily so that we got very wet. This place is situated upon a River emptying itself into a Bay where Ships some times anchor called Manga Nui (Great Shark) it lies on the Eastern Coast about 20 miles North of the Heads of Wangaroa, to which place we had intended to reach in the Evening but the rain prevented. To this place Kohu-Maru some of our people from Mangamuka have frequently gone to tell them about Jehovah & Jesus Christ, and the Lord has made them a blessing, so that some of them have turned from dumb idols to serve the living God. When we

[Page 97]

Nov: 1837

got within half a Mile of the Settlement we heard the tinkling of their Bell to call the people to service, which Bell we found was like that of many others a large Hoe suspended by a cord & struck with a stone. We arrived before they began, and being very wet we put off the service until we had changed our Cloaths &c. Bro: Whiteley read Prayers, and I Preached to them with good freedom from "Paul's Conversion". About 40 were present and appeared devoutly attentive. The rain continuing to fall very heavily we were prevented from proceeding onwards as intended and therefore had another service with them in the Evening when Mr. W adres'd them at length. This is a very pretty settlement, though but few Inhabitants. Here we have a promising cause, though it has been somewhat retarded through the unfaithfulness of the young Man I some Months ago appointed as Teacher to them. Having spent a troublesome night from the number of Fleas with which our habitation was infested we took our departure about six A.M.

Monday, 20 – By Eleven we arrived at Mr. McLeven's settlement about three miles from the Harbour of Wangaroa. By this person I was well known in Hobart Town – he has lately commenced a Timber establishment in this place. We accepted his kind offer of a Boat and in less than three hours I found myself upon the very spot where I had spent many a pleasing, and anxious hour: and from which after three years & six Months hard toil we were driven with the loss of every thing but life, on the 10th of January 1827.

On revisiting this to me all but consecrated spot I scarce know how to describe my feelings. Former scenes in rapid succession rushed upon my memory until I was almost overpowered. The labour & toil I and my Brethren had endured. The difficulties we had encountered

[Page 98]

and finally our flight with many attendant circumstances, all passed in painful review before me. The natural beauty of the scenery has suffered no diminution, but in other respects the place wore an air of melancholy gloom. Where our lovely Cottage with our School House & other out buildings once stood an Orniment to the Valley, and a delight to those who occupied it nothing remains but what serves as melancholy proof of that savage Barbarism which in one day destroyed the labour & toil of years. The seite where each building stood I could distinctly trace, but not a vestage of any of them remained save some broken pieces of Bricks where the Chimneys stood. Strawberries, Roses, Peaches &c &c which my own hands had planted were growing very luxuriantly. We gathered a good many Strawberries and brought over for Mrs. Turner as a specimen of the fruit of our former toil. The spot where our Infant Son was buried, and which the Natives dug up after we had left was very visible. Three of the stumps of the Posts belonging to the fencing remain, and

the indention in the ground where the body had been dug up is plain. His happy Spirit however has not been disturbed by barbarian hands. I could not but mourn at the desolate appearance of the Valley, very few inhabitants were to be seen and scarcely any of its former occupants. The greater parts have been removed by Death, and the remainder scattered among other tribes. I only saw two aged people that knew me, and who still possess their lands. After spending about three Hours in the Valley, we returned, and I confess I had many sorrowful afflictions as we walked down the River. Were the Natives sufficiently numerous to warrant it I would recommend its reoccupancy by our Society, but alas they are now few & feeble, and much of their Land has been sold by their conquerors to Europeans.

[Page 99]

Novr. 1837

Teusday, 21st – Spent the night at Mr. McLevens, and intended to leave early this Morning to get home if possible but the heavy rain prevent us our setting off until after Eleven.

Having travelled some miles we came to a River called Otangaroa whose waters were so swollen & the stream so rapid that we were obliged to wait two hours before we could cross. Our path lay through a country that has almost ceased to be traversed by man, and frequently were we at a loss to find the overgrown path. Night overtook us in the midst of a dense forest where we had lost our path and were therefore obliged to encamp. Our prospects for the Night were very cheerless. The ground & every thing around completely saturated with with wet, and no shelter until we had built one. All hands turned to in earnest, and in less than an hour we had erected our habitation, collected wet fern for our Bed made a good fire &c. The fire cheered us much for we were very wet & uncomfortable. Although our Accommodations were so unfavourable, I enjoyed a good night's repose & suffered no harm from the wet.

Wed: 22nd – A little after 6 A.M. we recomd. our Journey but lost nearly one hour in finding the path, and when found proved so overgrown that it was very difficult to make way at all in some places.

A few Miles from our encampment on the summit of a Hill, we found lying by the road side one of the big Guns taken from the Boyd at Mangaroo many years ago. The Natives of Mangamuka had drawn over from Mangaroo thus far towards their own place, but here their food & strength failed them, and there it lies a monument of their folly.

At four P.M. we arrived in safety at Mangamuka were we had left our Boat, the sight of which gladdened our hearts for we had become very

[Page 100]

tired with our Journey. One River flowing down the Mountains we had crossed no less than sixty times.

About eight we arrived at Mangungu and I felt grateful to my God for his protecting care towards me & mine.

Sat: 25th – During these three days I have been variously engaged in the Garden & about the Premises in which I have been blessed with health and Peace.

Last Evening I had a refreshing season at our little Class for which I bless my God, for I needed a lift by the way. Today have recd. a Letter of three foolscap Sheets from the Baron, complaining bitterly of Cap. McDonnell's treatment of him &c &c, but

with these matters by the help of God I feel resolved to have nothing whatever to do. Oh for a heart to love & serve my God better!

Sunday, 26th – Enjoyed the Native Service this Morning and had a good time in speaking to the Natives from “the Woman washing our Saviours feet with her tears &c”, and was favoured with tolerable freedom in the afternoon from “By faith Moses when he was come to years”. May the Lord bless the word to my Country-Men for some of them are in an awful state!

Decr. 2nd – Saturday. Have had a week of labour and exercise both to Body & Mind, and this especially has been a day of trial. Mrs. Turner has been very ill, and the Natives have been considerably excited by the conduct of an ungodly Country-Man around us.

Sunday 3 – Good time this Morning while addressing the Natives on “Daughter be of good cheer, thy sins which were many are all forgiven thee &c”. Preached in English in the afternoon but our cong. was small, but some appeared to feel while I spoke from “What is Man that thou art mindful of him, or the son of Man that thou visitest him!” O for a heart more fully devoted to my God, a heart from sin set free!

[Page 101]

Decr. 1837

Sunday 10th – Spoke to the Natives with tolerable freedom this Morning on the “unfortunate Widow” and hope the word did not fall powerless upon them. Had a pretty good English Congn. in the afternoon to whom I spoke with tolerable freedom from Eph: 1 – 13th and endeavoured to shew & press home the importance of inward Religion - “The sealing of the Holy Spirit”. Spent the Evening very comfortably with my family, and Mr. Wilson who is over here on business from the Bay of Islands. He appears a pious young Man.

Thursday, 14th – United in Marriage this Morning Mr. Mathew Marvienu and Miss Rebecca Pells, cousin to Mr. Woon. She has lately arrived here from Sydney and has thus hastily united herself to a stranger for life. Oh may their union be sanctified by the Almighty! The day was spent very agreeably & I hope profitably.

Sunday, 17th – Morning went up the River to [indecipherable] House, and assembled a few together to whom I spoke with much freedom on the Conversion of St. Paul. Afterwards spent sometime with two English Men speaking to them about their Souls, and having Prayed with them returned home. Heard Mr. Woon in English on “For some have not the knowledge of Christ, I speak this to your shame”. In the Evening adres’d the Natives with tolerable freedom, on Peter’s imprisonment and Deliverance. All were deeply attentive, but we want the life giving, soul renovating Power. Oh send us down a gracious Shower!

Sat: 23rd – Have been very busy this week putting up a new Fence in front of our Premises for the old was gone to wreck and presented an ugly appearance to all passers by. Have also been preparing Letters for England and the colonies by the vessels now about to leave.

[Page 102]

Sunday 24th – A very profitable Sabbath to my Soul. Attended the Native School

from nine to Eleven and was much pleased with the Children about 50 were present. In teaching them the Catechism my eldest Boy Thomas proposed the Questions, and my second Bay John led the answers with good effect. Was enabled to fix their attention while attempting to impress their minds with what they had heard. This School promises well.

Mr. Woon read Prayers and I preached to the people on the Birth of John the Baptist and circumstances connected therewith from the First of Luke.

Addres'd our little English Congregation in the afternoon from "~~And~~ For we Preach not ourselves &c". There was good feeling. Lord save the People!

Had my Spirit refreshed at the Native Service in the Evening which was conducted by Mr. Woon but which I afterwards attempted to bring home. In my warmth of feeling I am ready to conclude that we are on the eve of a gracious overpowering of the Holy Spirit. This is what we want for ourselves and people.

Sat: 30th – By the goodness of my God am brought to the close of another week in tolerable health and Peace, though I have had some rather sore temptations. Have had some refreshing seasons with the people while renewing their Tickets. They are certainly growing in knowledge as well as increasing in numbers. A considerable number have arrived and we are hoping to have an interesting day tomorrow. Christmas Day was a profitable one to me especially in the Evening while speaking in English in the Evening. One of our principal Men on the River Cap: McDonnell sailed yesterday for England in the "Lord Durham". The Giraffe has also sailed for Launceston and the Nimrod for Sydney.

[Page 103]

1837 Decr.

Sunday, 31st – Attended the Native Prayer Meeting this morning soon after five O'clock when about three Hundred were present, several of whom engaged in Prayer in a very solemn and appropriate manner.

Native School at Nine full a Hundred Children were present and in behaviour at least there is a great improvement. Felt my soul touched with the real compassion for them and drawn out in earnest desire for their welfare.

Bro: Woon conducted the Morning Service which was well attended. He spoke with tolerable good freedom and I afterwards felt well in my own Soul while endeavouring to urge the exhortation upon them. School again after Dinner, and at three heard Mr. Buller from "Consider your ways &c" – but he was wanting in energy and Power.

A little before six we again assembled the Natives when the Chapel was full to overflowing. I addres'd them for a short time from the latter part of the 13th of Romans and afterwards we held our Lovefeast. There was some good speaking & strong feeling, but the warmth & impetuosity of some of the people carried them beyond all bounds, and half a dozen would be speaking at once, ~~and~~ I found it impossible to control them. Notwithstanding the little confusion manifested we had strong proof that the Lord is carrying on his work among them.

A little after ten we again assembled to hold our Watch Night, several Chiefs spoke with good effect and towards the closing scene a most solemn effect was produced upon all. There was a feeling of holy consecration unto the Lord. Glory be to God for the Mercies of Another year!

[Page 104]

Journal for 1838

Jany. 6th – Have been endeavouring to spend this week unto the Lord, and have had

my mind kept in a calm serene state. My soul has been led out in anxious desire to spread abroad the knowledge of the Saviour's Name. With David I can say "My heart has been inditing a good matter". Of various plans I have thought to promote the Imperial & Spiritual Interest of this degraded people.

Mr. Wade of the Church Missy. from the Waimate arrived here on Teusday Evening and has been the week with us. He is a Pious & Judicious little man. He gives no great Report of their Proceedings but is disposed to speak favourably of what he here beholds.

Sunday 7 – Partially an Idle Sabbath to me. Mr. Wade being here he took the Morning service in Native and the English in the afternoon, and I was both pleased & profited with his Sermon on each occasion.

Spoke to the Natives in the Evening on the Barren Fig Tree but was by no means free or at home.

Sat: 13 – Have scarce any thing to write of this week of my own proceedings, save that I have been striving hard to get our Fences &c put into better repair round the Structure. Yesterday & today have been cutting a little of our Wheat.

On Teusday Evening last arrived in our River the Schooner Raiatea from Sydney, bringing to our shores a French Catholic Bishop & Priest who have taken up their abode within a few miles of us for which I am very sorry – as I fear their coming may be productive of much evil amongst our poor half enlightened people. But "the Lord reigneth" and he can overrule this also for good. O may he appear in our behalf!

[Page 105]

Sunday 14th – Accompanied by Bro. Buller went up the Waihoua this morning & spent the day amongst the Natives & Europeans, and I hope not in vain. Held a short service in the house of that singular man "Baron de Therie". He is the most singular man I am met with, and I fear will be a curse to New Zeals. Got home in time to address the Natives, and was favoured with freedom in so doing.

Sat: 20 – A busy week with our little wheat &c. Had much conversation this Evening with our Leaders & Chiefs about these Catholic Missionaries and their Doctrines arising out of their having already begun through their agents to disseminate some of their Doctrines among our people; but I hope the Lord will in mercy save them from their delusions.

Some of our leading men spoke in strong terms of reprobation of their doctrines and wished to have them sent out of the land. But alas the poor New Zealanders have no Head, nor have the Chiefs that confidence in each other as to enable them to act in concert in a case of such a nature.

Sunday 21st – Conducted the Native service in the morning, and endeavoured to say some strong things to our people by way of caution from "And when she saw the tree that it was good for food &c". Thus our Catholic Neighbours have begun to exhibit their image of the Virgin Mary &c &c to attract the notice of our poor simple minded people & lead them astray. Spoke in English on Providence from the 73 Psalm "Thou shalt guide me with thy counsel & afterwards receive me to glory". Was not quite at liberty.

In the Evening we had a profitable English service. I read part of the form of "Renewing Covenant with God" and afterwards administered the Sacrament to my Brethren and our wives.

[Page 106]

Sunday 28th – Went over to Waima yesterday and had a very profitable time with them in the Evening, but was afterwards grieved with hearing a Native give a statement of the proceedings of these Catholics during the week at Pairinaki where they have been endeavouring to persuade that tribe to allow them to come & take up their abode amongst them. “But the Lord reigneth!”

Had a very profitable time with the people this Morning from “Jesus, Simon, & Mary”, “Woman thy sins are forgiven thee”.

Came up the Valley and held another service with Moku a promising young Chief & some of his people who listened with attention while I spoke from “What must I do to be saved &c” – returned home & got in time for the Evening service when Mr. Buller preached a good sermon in native on Repentance. I afterwards spoke a little and felt my Spirit truly stirred within me. But was afterwards grieved with what I heard concerning the slanderous reports of our Catholic Neighbours respecting us.

Feb. 3rd, Sat: - this has been a week of considerable exercise to my mind respecting the people of our charge. The ungodly Europeans are using unlawful means to get their land from them and the Catholics are industriously spreading their dogmas among them: but truth is great and will prevail.

I feel myself placed in circumstances requiring special wisdom to enable me to direct the enquiring natives aright both as regards their temporal and spiritual interests, for to us, me in particular they look for counsel. O may they be saved from the error of the wicked, and with myself & family be saved for ever! Amen.

[Page 107]

Feb: 1838

Sunday, 4th – Had a good congregation & a good time this mornng. at the Native Service. Spoke from “Jacob praying to be delivered from the hand of his Bro: Esau”. In the afternoon addressed the few present at our English Service from “Who will have all men to be saved &c”.

Had my mind considerably exercised in the Evening through hearing from several of our Natives that the ungodly European Catholics have repeatedly threatened during last week to take away my life because I have exposed some of their errors and variously cautioned our people against being led astray by them.

Last Evening especially I said strong things to arouse one of our leading men to prevent his son a Boy of about 8 years of age from being taken to them to be re-baptized, having been baptized by us some time back. The Father in consequence prevented him from being taken to the Catholic Meeting today, which I learn had caused strong feeling against me but “My life & times are in the Almighty’s hands” and they cannot harm without his Permission. To flesh and blood however these things are painful. May I be saved from unnecessary fear! Amen.

Sat: 10th – A week of strong conflict of mind: and at times considerable depression of Spirit – arising in part from suffering my mind to dwell too much upon passing events of a painful nature. O how weak my faith! And how tossed & wavering my mind! Met Bro: & Sister Wallis at Mr. Whiteleys on Wednesday. Sister W & the Children are come over to spend a short time with us: but he has returned home. May the Lord bless & sanctify her visit to her. She has now been for several years without any female Friend or companion.

[Page 108]

Sunday, 11th – Had rather a barren day to my own mind. Preached in English in the afternoon and native in the Evening. The people were very attentive while I dwelt on

“Did not our hearts burn within us while he talked with us &c”.

Sat: 17th – By the kindness of my heavenly Father am brought to the close of another week in safety: but it has been a week of great trial to my mind from foes within and foes without. I have at times been very low in mind, and ready to wish I were in other circumstances & in some other land. My nerves are too weak to hear the trials to which they are now frequently exposed. And alas my power to lay hold on the strength of my God is but little. Lord help thy unworthy servant!

Sunday, 18th – Our native attendance has been very good today. Read the Commandments & Creed from which I endeavoured to shew the people what we are to believe & what to practice. Dwelt upon the Second Commandment “Thou shalt not make to thyself any graven image &c” shewing them that the usage of our new Neighbours in bowing to the image of Mary &c is a species of Idolatry. After Dinner met the Candidates for Baptism near One Hundred were present. Pleasing sight! May the Lord sanctify our every effort to his Glory!

Wed: 21 – On returning from taking Sister Wallis down to Newark this Evening found Mr. Clarke from the Waimate who had come over to pay us a visit, and had brought with him information from Mr. Hobbs who has survived with his family in the Bay. Spent a very agreeable Evening with our friend & Brother Clarke.

[Page 109]

Feb: 1838

Sat: 24th – Left home yesterday morning in company with Mr. Clarke. We got to the Waimate by two: from whence I rode to the Kereken ~~bu~~ and spent the night with my old friends Mr. & Mrs. Kemp, who treated me with the greatest kindness. Borrowed their boat and after a very heavy uncomfortable pull got down to Paipia a little before noon, but found Bro: Hobbs & his family at Cap. Chadon's. Felt considerable emotion in Meeting my old friend again after an absence of near Eleven years – years of Trial and of Mercy to us both. Was glad to find that he had the Authority ~~f~~ of his District to remove to Van Deiman's Land for the benefit of his family – education of his Children & Mrs. Hobb's health. But hope he may remain in this Mission for a time at least.

Sunday, 25th – Spent the day at Paihia where I heard the Rev. H. Williams once in Native and twice in English. To me a dry day.

Wed: 28th – Returned home this afternoon accompanied by Bro: Hobbs, and was thankful to find all well. Have received several Letters from the Brethren in the Islands and rejoice to learn that the Lord is still carrying forward his glorious work. Our hearts were warmed & cheered at our little Prayer Meeting this Evening – Glory to God!

March, 2nd – Accompanied by Bro: Hobbs went down to Pakonai yesterday from whence we returned today. Bro: Whiteley joins with me in opinion & Mr. Woon also that Mr. Hobbs would do better to remain here until the mind of the Comee. is known, than proceed to Van Deiman's Land where I fear he would not succeed as a Preacher.

[Page 110]

Sunday, 4th – An interesting day at Mangungu few if any less than 700 were on the

Station. The Chapel was overflowing & many outside and every countenance was rivetted while Bro: Hobbs addressed them from part of the 3rd of Mathew and considering his absence from the land for five years it was not only gratifying but surprising to hear him speak the language so well. The Lord sanctify his word to the people. After Sermon we Baptized upwards of one Hundred & twenty adults, and after Dinner near 40 Children. Mr. Hobbs spoke to us also in English in the afternoon from "And Lo I am with you always, even to the ends of the World". Some good remarks were made, and I found it good to be there.

Full chapel again in the Evening. After Sermon we Married 27 couples of those who had been Baptized in the Morning. Oh may the Services of this day be sanctified of the Lord!

Sunday, 11th – After another week of anxiety and toil I hail with pleasure the sacred day of rest. Though very weak in Body was enabled to Preach to the Natives in the mornng. and to our little English cong. in the Aftern. My Soul was quickened & comforted while I spoke from "Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end &c". Spent the Evening with my family & reading greatly to my edification from some Periodicals lately recd. from home. It is truly delightful & encouraging to hear what the Lord is doing in the Earth. "O Jesus ride on till all are subdued &c".

[Page 111]

1838, March

Sat: 17th – This has been a week of varied excitement & exercise to me. On Monday recd. many affe. Epistles from my Brethren and old friends in Van Deiman's Land. There the Lord blessed my poor endeavours to the good of many who still bear me & mine in affe. remembrance before the Throne of Mercy and wish my return among them. But Ah! in that lovely Society Satan has sown his Tares, and Effected a division amongst them.

Teusday. Went over to the Waimate by special request to attend the Marriage of Mr. R. Mathews & Miss Blomfield Sister to Mrs. Clarke. Had a very wet & uncomfortable journey, but was most affe. recd. by all the friends, and spent a very pleasant Eveng. with them.

Wednesday, returned home after the Ceremony was over but was much tired with my journey.

Thursday fully expected Bro: Hobbs & family over from the Waimate, but a messenger arrived in the Eveng. stating that his youngest Child was taken so dangerously ill that his life was almost despaired of. "All flesh is grass". Bro: & Sister Wallis came up this Morning with their Children, and their coming we hailed with delight, for their company we greatly esteem.

Friday – Bro: Whiteley came up to attend a special District Meeting respecting Mr. Hobbs &c &c. The business was conducted with the greatest unanimity and I hope will be overruled for good to the Mission.

Saturday – Spent the Afternoon with Bro: and Sister Wallis at the Horeki but was not comfortable in my mind. Oh for more grace to enable me in all things to see God & enable me to act for his glory!

[Page 112]

Sunday, 18th – Heard Bro: Wallis in Native in the Morning, and in English in the afternoon. The latter was a good Sermon from “Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven”. He is an excellent Preacher, far surpassing most I have heard in these Seas. O may he be very useful!

In the Evening I Preached in English from “Except ye eat the flesh and drink the blood of the Son of Man &c” – and afterwards administered the Sacrament to my Brethren & their wives, it was a very profitable time – Praise the Lord!

Teusday, 20th – Received a Letter from Bro: Hobbs this morning from Waimate informing us of the Death of his Child – O may he be supported, and may the bereavement be sanctified to his good!

The weather becoming more favourable Bro: Wallis & family left us this afternoon to return home. They are an amiable pair. May the gracious Lord have them and their two little ones in his holy keeping.

Friday, 23rd – Bro: Hobbs & family arrived in safety this Evening. I met them at Waiho, and thankfully received them back to this Mission, from which they ought not to have been removed, but God is good and not unfrequently even makes “The wrath of man to praise him”. O may his coming be rendered an everlasting blessing to many!

Sunday, 25th – Bro: Hobbs Preached to the Natives this Morning after I had read Prayers, and I addressed them in the Evening. I also Preached in English in the afternoon, but had very hard work both to Body & Mind. My frame has been suffering great weakness for several weeks past but today have unusually poorly. Lord help me!

[Page 113]

April, 1838

Sat: 7th – Have been so unnerved for the last fortnight that I have scarce been able to attend to anything, but through the blessing of God upon the means prescribed I am much better. Mrs. Turner has also been the subject of his chastening rod. O may these dispensations be sanctified to us!

Our old friend the Revd. H. Williams arrived on Thursday to pay us a friendly visit, and we have greatly enjoyed his company.

Sunday, 8th – A profitable Sabbath. Met two Classes for Tickets & heard three Sermons - Mr. Williams in Native in the Morning & English in the Afternoon and felt my soul profited on each occasion and was pleased & profited also with Mr. Hobb's Sermon to the Natives in the Evening.

Sat: 28th – Since my last entry in my Journal have been the subject of various exercises and trials, but the Lord has not left me without encouraging tokens of his love. We have this week been favoured with a visit from Mr. Richd. Ford Davies & Dr. Ford – the company of the former I greatly enjoyed. He is a very spiritually minded man. My health has been better this week than for some time past, but Mrs. Turner & the Children have been poorly.

Sunday, 29 – Addressed the Natives this morning but felt it hard work neither mind nor tounge free. Met the Leaders afterwards, and had one very painful case to decide upon. There are many Trials with his people. Heard Bro: Hobbs in English from “He that hath my Commandments & keepeth them, he it is that loveth me!”

upon which some judicious & profitable remarks were made with which my own heart was affected.

Had to put one out of Society in the Evening to whom I spoke in strong terms for his case required it. May the gracious Lord sanctify all our endeavours.

[Page 114]

1838

May 1st, Teusday. This Morning our eldest Boy left us for School at the Waimate under the care of Bro: Hobbs who has gone to the Bay on business. May the "Angel of the Covenant bless the Lad". His Mother feels much at parting with him, but it has long been painful to us that we could not get him into a good School, but now thank God the way at length has opened.

Sunday 6th – Had my own mind well affected this morning while addressing the Native Congregation from "For we know if this earthly house of our Tabernacle were dissolved &c". In the Afternoon Spoke in English from "If thou knewest the gift of God & who it is that saith unto me give me to drink &c" – but was not free; others however I saw felt the truth come home.

Sat: 12 – This has been a week of more than common Labour and Feeling to me.

Monday – In conjunction with my Brethren had a Meeting with our Chiefs & a number of Natives who have lately arrived from the Waikato District. The main object of their coming over was to state to us the circumstances of a painful affair in which some of them have lately been involved, viz, that of Plundering a little vessel in Harbour of Waingaroa – and having heard their statement we were satisfied that all the Christian Natives with the exception of three had acted honourably. One Christian Chief gave the Cap: a large Payment in Pigs & Potatoes for what the Heathen party had taken from him. The conduct of the Cap: himself appears to have been the cause of the Quarrell.

The latter part of the Day was entirely taken up in providing Medicine for the sick. Several have of late been suddenly called to the Grave.

[Page 115]

May, 1838

Teusday – Two Europeans came up the River this Morning bringing the painful news that a European Sawyer down the River was missing and was reported to have been murdered by a Slave belonging to Wirinaki. After consulting our Chiefs & several of the Europeans it was agreed that I should go down to Wirinaki in the Morning to hear the particulars of the case & persuade the Chiefs to secure the supposed murderer until the case was fully known.

Wednesday – According to appointment went down to Wirinaki & found the Chiefs assembled ready to receive me having heard that I was coming. The supposed Murderer was brought before me & a Boy of about 10 years of age who was with him in the Canoe when the affair took place. I heard their statement & made many enquiries, from which I was satisfied that he had been murdered. Recommended the Chiefs to secure the Murderer & keep him in custody until search had been made for the body & the case fully proved. Spent about four hours with them, but could not persuade them to bind the Man. They were willing however to give him up to me & the Europeans generally to deal with him as we thought proper. I feared however my

taking the Man in charge would not be right. Returned home & persuaded Thos. Walker our Chief to go down immediately and get the Chiefs to give up the Man to him &c. To this he agreed & went down in the Night.

Thursday – About four P.M. Mr. Whitely came up with two other Boats bringing with them the Corps of the European which had been found on the Beach 12 miles below where the Murder was supposed to have been committed.

[Page 116]

A number of Europeans assembled among whom were Drs. Cook & Smith who examined the Body and gave it as their Judgment he had come by his Death through the injury received prior to his being thrown in the water. We proceeded with the Prisoner to the Horeke and entered upon an enquiry from the Prisoner & Boy his companion as to what they had done to him &c. This enquiry continued until about three in the Morning and came to the conclusion that the poor man had come by his Death from the treatment he had recd. We sent over the Depositions to Mr. Busby the British Resident requesting him to come over to investigate the business more thoroughly & bring it to a close. Most of the Principal Chiefs consented to this measure and recommended that the Native should be kept a Prisoner until Mr. Busby came over.

Friday – Near noon we committed to the Dust the Remains of poor Biddle. Many Europeans attended whom I addressed at some length on the solemn subject of Death &c to which they listened with great attention. O may these solemn, painful dispensations of providence be sanctified to my good & that of others!
Bro: Hobbs returned from the Bay this Evening accompanied by Mr. Ashwell from the Bay who has come over to pay us a visit – Saturday.

Sunday: 13th – Our congregations today have been very large and deeply attentive. Bro: Hobbs addressed them in the morning & I in the Evening, and afterwards we administered the Lord's Supper to the Natives. The season was most solemn & Profitable. The people were more orderly than I ever expected to see New Zealanders.

[Page 117]

May – 1838

Not so many communicated as we expected and we believe it arose in many of them from a view of their own unfitness to approach so solemn an ordinance. My own Spirit was much refreshed.

We had a good Congn. in English also frø in the afternoon to whom I endeavoured to improve the late afflictive dispensation from "The wicked is driven away in his wickedness".

Friday, 18th – Mr. Busby the British Resident arrived to investigate the subject of the late supposed Murder. Many assembled at the Mission Station but others whose preserve was required could not come in time & therefore the matter could not be entered into until the morrow. Accompanied Mr. Busby to see Dr. Ross who for some time has been in a very afflicted state. Found it good to go to the house of Mourning.

Sat: 19th – About 60 Europeans assembled on the Mission Station this morning to attend the Trial of Kite the Native Slave for the supposed murder of Henry Biddle.

Many of the Principal Chiefs also were in attendance. The Trial commenced about 11 A.M., Mr. Busby, British Resident acting as Judge. In the absence of power to form a regular Jury, every European present was urged to attend carefully to evidence as it proceeded that at the close he might join in passing a righteous sentence. The poor man was there in chains, the sight of which affected me much. The case was patiently investigated and continued until 5 P.M. when by the Majority he was found guilty of Murder, and the Chiefs present acquiesced in the decision and agreed to carry the Sentence into execution on Monday by putting the poor Man to death. Oh how much did I

[Page 118]

feel when it was fully decided that he should Die & my own opinion is that he did not actually murder the poor man, but occasioned his Death and consequently his crime was Man Slaughter. Still I hope & believe it is one of those painful dispensations that will be overruled for public good in general,

Sunday, 20th – Bro: Hobbs spoke to good effect this Morning to the Natives who were very attentive. I adres'd the English in the afternoon from "But the righteous hath hope in his Death".

In the Evening Bro: Hobbs & I went up to the Horeke to visit the poor Native Prisoner. We spent some time with him, and were pleased with the concern he manifested to be prepare to Die.

Monday, 21st – About 10 this morning Kite the New Zealand youth was Shot for having murdered Henry Biddle. He was executed upon a small Island in sight of the Station. The scene though at a distance affected my mind very much. Bro: Hobbs attended him to the last and hopes favourably of his end. He is the first New Zealander that I am aware of who has undergone anything like a formal trial and thus suffered for his crimes. May this painful event be overruled for good!

Tuesday, 22nd – Left home this Morning with James Busby Esq., the B. Resident for the Waimate, and in consequence of our Boys not catching our horses and meeting us at the place appointed we had to walk the whole of the way. We arrived at the house of our friend Mr. Clarke between seven & eight tired enough. We had much interesting conversation by the way. Found my Boy, with all our friends in tolerable health.

[Page 119]

May – 1838

Sat: 26 – Returned home from the Waimate last Evening & was thankful to find all well. Heavy Thunder & Lightening & much Rain during the night and the weather is excessively cold today. Our friend Mr. Stephenson from Kaipara had come over today. He is a good man and hope his coming will be rendered profitable to us.

Sunday, 27th – A barren Sabbath to me. Weather unfavourable for going out. Visited Dr. Ross in his affliction & had a profitable season with him. Visited another European family, talked to & Prayed with them. Heard Mr. Hobbs in English in the afternoon, but was not greatly edified.

June, Sat: 2nd – Monday & Teusday was busy assisted by about twenty Natives putting in part of our wheat and since then have been attending to various duties connected with the Station. Have been much edified in reading Mammon – one of

the best written works I ever read. It has thrown much fresh light into my mind, and discovered the selfishness of my Nature in a way I never before beheld it. How thoroughly depraved is the human heart!

Have this week made a purchase of some land from Dr. Ross, which I intend for the benefit of my Children should Providence lead to their permanent abode in this land. This land has been many years in the hands of Europeans, and the Natives now claimed no interest in it. N.T. This has caused my mind considerable exercise for fear I should have done wrong in this matter. May the gracious Lord direct my steps!

Sunday, 3rd – spoke in Native this Morning and in English in the afternoon from “Quench not the Spirit”. Found this important Scripture profitable to my own mind, and others appeared to feel it to be a personal concern. O how often have I queried the Holy Spirit!

[Page 120]

Sat: 9th – This has been a week of Judgment & of mercy. Two of my Children have been ill but are now better. My dear wife was taken suddenly very ill this afternoon while we were reading & talking over some Letters just received from beloved friends in Van Deiman’s Land - An attack of pleurisy accompanied with a high state of Fever. Our good old friend the Rev: Saml. Marsden has gone to his reward, and I to must Die. Lord prepare me & mine for all thy will! O sanctify thy dispensations to us as a family! Amen.

Sunday, 10th – Confined to the House all day (save interned a Native Child) attending upon my poor wife who is very ill. Fever very high and Pain in her side very great. Lord in mercy spare thine Handmaid to her family!

Sat: 16 – A week of great affliction to my dear Partner, but the Lord is graciously sanctifying the means & restoring her to her though still suffering & very weak. “The fever has own his touch and fled.” Dr. Smith has been in attendance every day twice and Dr. Cook also has been repeatedly down to our help. Blessed be the house of him who kindly hears when his Creatures cry in the time of need.

Sunday, 17 – Confined at home all day with my afflicted Partner – except an hour in the afternoon when I spoke to the few assembled in English from “Return unto thy rest O My Soul for the Lord hath dealt bountifully with thee &c”. Found it profitable to my own mind to recount the mercies of the Lord, and call upon My Soul to yield up herself fully unto him. God is my Rest, Refuge, & Hope. O may my Soul fully rest in Him at all times!

[Page 121]

Sat. 23 – A week of Confinement to house by reason of my wife’s affliction, it has also been a week of more than common anxiety as to the result of the same – Hope & Fear alternately operate – She is in some respects better, but in others I fear worse – On Wednesday Morning we sent a message express for Dr Ford from the Bay of Solands, and last night he arrived, accompanied by our son Thomas returning from school at the Waimate - the Dr hopes she will soon be better, but today she appears to me much more feeble.

My mind however has been much relieved this evening while supplicating the throne of mercy in her behalf & my own – May my soul sink into the will of God, knowing that his will is best!

On Monday Evening last poor Dr Ross quitted this mortal Vale and winged his flight to Eternity – I hope to meet him in a better world – He was a sensible man, but had greatly neglected the salvation of his Soul; but during his affliction his mind was brought to feel its sinful and helpless condition, and I trust also to rest upon the atoning sacrifice of the Lord Jesus for Pardon and Everlasting Life – we committed his Body to the Dust on Wednesday Evening, and the same Evening took his widow into our House until an opportunity offers for her removing elsewhere to her friends. May it be to the everlasting good!

Sunday 24 – A comparatively barren Sabbath to me – was not able to attend the native Services on account of the affliction of Mrs Turner but one kind friend Mrs March sat with her in the afternoon while I addressed our little English congregation from all the days of my appointed time will I wait un till my charge come – But did not feel well.

[Page 122]

Sat 30 – The continued affliction of my dear wife has bound me to her room nearly all week to attend upon her – at times her weakness & suffering has been great, and I have been ready to conclude that the time of our seperation was drawing near – this has awakend strong feelings in my breast but I thank the Lord He has heard my supplications, relieved my own mind, and I hope is favouring her with symptoms of returning health – O may he in mercy spare her to me, her children and his Church! Amen -.

July 1 – Sunday – confined at home all day with Mrs Turner who continues very ill – O may the gracious Lord support her and fully fit her for all his righteous will! That will I know is best, but my unbelieving heart fights against my better judgment and spoils the peace of my Mind.

Sat. 7th – Another week of distressing anxiety of mind concerning the issue of my dear wife's distressing affliction – Four tedious weeks have now passed away since she was first seriously attacked – Some days She has been a little better and others worse – a large abcess is now forming under the right arm which gives her great pain – May the God of all grace strengthen her upon the Bed of languishing according to His gracious Promise! To him she makes her moan and endeavours to cast her case upon him.

The disease operates at times most powerfully upon her Nervous System, and causes her to feel a restlessness bordering upon impatience yet she cries 'Thy will O Lord is best'.

My own Mind feels keenly on beholding ~~my~~ her thus Suffering, and at times forebodes consequences the most fatal. I feel it will be hard work to seperate, but God is good and wise.

[Page 123]

Sunday, 8 – Our kind friend Mrs March attended on Mrs Turner this morning while I went to Chapel. Addressed the Natives after Bro: Woon had read Prayers from the second of Titus, from which I was enabled to say some plain things to them. The remainder of the day I spent in attendance upon my greatly afflicted Partner.

Sat: 14 – Thus am I brought to the close of another week of great exercise & trial on account of the protracted & painful affliction on my dear Partner. An abcess under the right ArmPit was opened by Dr Smyth on Monday Morning from which there has been a great discharge of matter during the week – Two others

are rapidly forming from which she suffers much and her frame appears sinking fast – from several Nights she has had most painful & profuse cold sweats from which my fears have been considerably alarmed.

This affliction blessed be God has led me more fully to cry to Heaven for help, being more fully assured that God alone is the “Great Physician” I have been at times much encouraged to commit my dear wife & all into his hands knowing my loss would be her Eternal gain. Oh! what a blessed thing is Religion in Sickness and the prospect of Eternity. Though her poor Nerves have been & still are greatly irritated by her Complaint, yet she is enabled to commit herself to her Heavenly father, resting assured that all will be well whether for Life or for Death.

Have received two excellent Letters from my two valuable friends Messrs Sherwin & Reid, Launceston accompanied by a very valuable present from them and other kind friends there – Thanks be to God on their account!

[Page 124]

Sunday 15th – Another distressing night with my afflicted Partner her Suffering was great and the cold sweats were so profuse that I was quite alarmed.

Her Head was very much affected but in Her wandering the Mind was directed to the Lord Jesus, on whose atonement She has rested her Eternal will.

A little before Noon Doctors Smyth & Cook came in and opened the large abscess which had been forming a little above the right Hip for full a month. Dr Cook made the incision and the operation was very painful the abscess being deeply seated, but the Lord gave his Handmaid strength – the discharge was very great, but it produced immediate relief for which my Soul magnified the name of the Lord, still I rejoiced with trembling lest these discharges should weaken her System beyond recovery – Spent the day in attendance upon her, but was not denied refreshment of Soul from the Lord of Sabbath.

Teusday, 17 – Yesterday Dr Smyth opened the remaining abscess under Mrs Turner’s arm, which with the other blessed be God appears doing well, and her medical attendants pronounce her as decidedly better, and in a fair way for a speedy recovery.

Have received Letters today from the Brothers McKenny & Watkins, breathing a most Affectionate Spirit, and communicating some important information.

Other com’s. from the Comee. etc have arrived we learn in the Bay of Islands for us, and which we hope will relieve our minds from that anxiety under which they have so long laboured in not hearing from the Committee. Bro: Watkins is appointed to labour in this Mission in future. Oh may this appointment be overruled for the glory of God in the Salvation of Many! Amen.

[Page 125]

July, 1838

Sat: 21 – Letters &c have arrived from the Comee. very satisfactory to me. W’s case is not yet settled but they say there is but little hope of his escape.

They have acceded to my request to be allowed to return to one of the Colonies, and will send out some one to take charge of the Mission. O may my steps in this matter be guided aright!

We have received one Letter only from our own Relatives, which gives us much pleasure.

Dr. Ford accompanied by Mr. Wade arrived last Evening to see Mrs. Turner, and am encouraged from the Doctor’s testimony, that she is decidedly better. O may the Lord soon restore her fully!

Sunday, 22nd – Poor day with me. Mrs. T. not so well. Heard Mr. Wade in Native in the Morning and English in the Afternoon. The former was dry but in the latter he excelled. Sermon really good. Felt its influence upon my own heart.

Sat: 28 – A week of affliction of Body & keen conflict of mind. Mrs. Turner has some days been better and others worse, but hope on the whole She is somewhat stronger in constitution than She was last Saturday Evening. O for Patience, fortitude, and calm resignation to the will of Heaven.

Sunday, 29th – Was enabled to get out and address our little English Congregation this Afternoon. Spoke plainly to them from “For thou Lord art good & ready to forgive and plentiful in Mercy to all them that call upon thee”. Oh how encouraging such declarations of the sacred word – found it profitable to my own mind. Bless the Lord! Spent the Evening in profitable converse and devotional exercise with my own family. May I & mine be fully consecrated to the Almighty!

[Page 126]

Teusday, 31st – This Morning our two eldest Boys Thomas & John left home this Morning for the Waimate School under the care of Bro: Hobbs who has gone over to the Bay. Felt a little at parting with them, but am thankful for the privilege of such an Institution in this barbarous land. May the divine blessing rest upon the Lads! Bless the Lord my dear wife is now bidding fair to recover. She has been much better these two days.

August 4th, Sat: Haveing received very pleasing intelligence from my friends & Brethren in Launceston & Hobart Town during this week by the Brittonia that has arrived. Glory to God for the prosperity of his cause amongst my old friends. And may He reward those who have shewed kindness to us a thousandfold in their own Bosoms! Amen.

Thanks be to my Heavenly Father for his goodness to me & mine during another week. My afflicted Partner has been gaining strength this week, but is still very unwell & weak. Just two months today since She was obliged to keep her Bed.

Sunday 5th – Addressed the Natives this Morning with pretty good freedom from “But I obtained &c”, Paul. Heard Bro: Woon in the Afternoon from “If we confess our Sins &c”. Afterwards by his request I gave an address there being a good many Sailors present. There was deep attention and some strong feeling. I endeavour to improve the event of one of their number falling down the Hatch way and being nearly killed last Evening. O when will these poor ungodly Sailors take heed unto their ways & be wise!

Spent the Evening most profitably with my family but feel the loss of my two Singing Boys who have gone to School. The Lord bless them and save them Eternally.

[Page 127]

August, 1838

Sat: 11th – A week of better Health of Body & more Peace of Mind than most I have lately had. Have been enabled to get out a little and Garden this week my dear wife being considerably better, though still confined to her Room & generally to her Bed. On Thursday Evening we buried the poor Sailor from the Toki Ran who came by his Death through falling down the Hatchways. I endeavoured to give them a warm & solemn address on the occasion in order to raise them to some concern about

Eternal realities.

Sister Hobbs was taken ill a few days back and is still confined to her Bed. Oh how many loud & powerful calls have we to be always ready!

Sunday, 12 – Heard Bro: Woon in native this morning and Preached in English in the afternoon to the very few present from “The Lord knoweth how to deliver the Godly out of Temptations” – but was not free. This Sabbath has not been so profitable to me as some.

Sat: 18 – After so long a confinement with my afflicted Partner have been enabled to spend a good part of this week in labour about the station. Thanks be to the Almighty after ten weeks confinement Mrs. T. has been enabled today just to step out of doors and as the weather is becoming more settled I hope She will soon gather strength to enable her to attend to her family again. O for a heart to praise my God!

Sunday, 19th – Seldom have I retired to rest with a mind more tranquil and composed than last Evening but alas! was not permitted long to enjoy repose. About two in the Morning Mrs. Turner and myself were awakend by a roaring crackling noise like that of fire. I hastened to the Parlour where I had left a little fire about ten Oclock and found it full

[Page 128]

of Smoke & fire. I immediately gave the alarm to the family. I attempted to enter the room a second time to see the extent of the fire when I felt all but suffocated and burned my feet with the heat of the floor. Alarm was immediately given to the Settlement by the ringing of the Bell, and it being Saturday night many were soon on the Spot with my Brethren Moon and Hobbs. The fire having got such hold of the House and being built of inflammable Pine all hope of saving it was over. Every effort was made to save all the Property possible. My poor Sick wife had got out of the house with the Children while I was alarming the Settlement but being unable to walk had fallen & bruised herself very much. One of our Native youths observing her in this condition threw a Blanket around her and carried her up to Mr. Hobbs, but here it was found She could not abide as it was expected that also would be in flames in a few Minutes not being much more than twenty yards distant, and being built principally of Raupo – a Native Rush or Hay. She was then with the Children carried down to Brother Woons, who with his affectionate wife kindly gave up their own Bed to her. In less than two hours from the time we discovered our danger the House with the Public Store adjoining was completely burned to the ground, nothing remaining but the Brick Chimneys.

Much of our Personal Property, as well as that belonging to the Mission was destroyed. Much of Mrs. Turner’s wearing apparel, also the Children’s was consumed, together with many of my most valuable Books. My Private Journals for fourteen years, including a brief narrative of my Parentage, Early life,

[129]

Aug: 1838

Conversion to God, Call to the Missionary work, &c &c. This part of my loss I deeply feel, and know it cannot be retrieved. All my Public & Private Letters, & Documents of every kind have also been destroyed. But I would not, I do not complain. Blessed forever, blessed be my great Deliverer’s Name. My Life has been spared, and my wife & Children are with me, “The living, the living to Praise our God”. This calamity I am satisfied is designed of Heaven for my good, and though painful the Cups yet I

see, I feel it is mixed with much of Mercy. Had it taken place a few weeks sooner in all probability the shock would have completely destroyed my poor wife, who was then to human appearance at the point of death. Through the abundant of our God however She appears not to have sustained any material injury by the painful event, and her grateful soul magnifies her great Deliverer's name.

Another cause of gratitude to us is the behaviour of our Natives on the occasion. They laudably exerted themselves to save our Property from the flames, nor are aware though many were on the spot, and in the dead of night that a single article was pilfered. Glory be to God for the change wrought amongst this people! What a contrast between their conduct and that of our People at Wangaroa in 1829. Then we were stripped of every thing, and our own People were amongst the greatest Plunderers.

Although conscious of the Mercy & Goodness of God to me and mine, and Grateful for our Deliverance, this has been a painful Sabbath to me. Could not keep my mind from dwelling upon the burning scene &c &c – but God is good! He knoweth our weakness, and Pities the infirmities of his Children.

[Page 130]

Monday, 20th – Bro: Whiteley having heard of our calamity came up last Evening, and today we have taken into consideration the circumstances in which we are now placed, and have come to the following Resolutions. That a good Perminant House shall be built as soon as possible and that as a temporary measure Bro: Buller with his wife & Child shall reside with Bro: Whitely, and that we occupy his dwelling until one can be erected for us. This arrangement will liberate Mr. Buller to itinerate amongst the Tribes on the other side of the River, who are in a destitute state as to religious instruction.

My dear wife though suffering from her bruises I hope is not worse from her fright, exposure &c &c nor am I suffering much save from my burned foot, but what a Mercy I was not consumed! Glory!

Sat: 25th – This week has passed away and I am yet alive. Glory be to God! My mind has been variously exercised, and at times all but distressed from reflection on our losses. The difficulties into which I am thrown in my Public Accounts &c through the loss of many of the public Documents but in God is my help, and on him I endeavour to cast my care. Oh for mighty faith! Lord help me!

Mrs. Turner is improving a little. The Children and myself are well, save my foot. Bro: & Sister Woon do all they can to make us comfortable. Praise God!

Sunday, 26th – Addressed the Natives this Morning from “These are they that came out of great tribulation and washed their robes &c”. Good time to myself and the Natives were feelingly attentive. Many strangers present. Heard Bro: Woon with profit in English in the afternoon, and spent the Evening with the families at home. Oh! for a heart to love my God more fully!

[Page 131]

Aug: 1838

Wed: 29 – Yesterday Bro: Buller & family left us to join Mr. Whitely at the Newark Station near the Heads.

Early this morning I set off to visit the Waimate where after a wet, cold, uncomfortable journey I arrived before sun down, and was very kindly received by the friends. Found several of the Brethren there from the other Stations having come on Public business. Spent the Evening comfortably with them.

My two Boys who are there at School found in good health, and glad to see their Father. Poor Lads they had many enquiries to make respecting what was burned and what was saved &c &c.
Felt grateful for the kind sympathizing spirit manifested by all the friends, and trust I profited by the conversations we had together.

September 1st – Sat: - Returned home yesterday and scarcely ever had a more wet uncomfortable journey in my life. After I had come on too far to return the rain began to fall, and continued all the way and towards evening in coming down the River it became dreadful, so that I was afraid we should not get home in safety – but through mercy arrived in safety by nine, and found my dear wife still improving and the Children well.

Removed with my family to our temporary Dwelling, the one Mr. Buller has left, and feel thankful to Heaven for a comfortable home. The kindness of Mr. & Mrs. Woon in gladly sheltering us when homeless &c &c I hope we shall not forget. The Lord reward them!

Sunday, 2nd – A laborious, but profitable day. Attended School in the Morning – Conduct the Native Service – Preached in English – Spoke a little again in the Evening, and then spoke to 20 Natives in Class but have felt the Presence of the Lord with me. Glory to his Name!

[Page 132]

Sep: 1838

Saturday 8th – Closed a week of hard labour very profitably this Evening in company with Bro: Woon at Mangamuka giving Tickets to the People. Met the Men and Bro: Woon the Women and had a very profitable sermon with them. I hope they are growing in grace though not much in number.

Sunday, 9th – Mangamuka – Preached to the people this Morning with blessed freedom & feeling from the last Chapter of Revelations. Shewed them the Happiness that awaits the pious in the better world. Warned the careless from that awful Passage “For without are Dogs &c” – and invited all to the “Living Waters”. Came down to Noah’s place and gave Tickets to the Females. Called with Bro: Woon at Robt Hunts where I spoke to him & to others with a heart feeling after their real welfare. A good time. Afterwards Baptized Hunt’s Child. Returned home weary in Body but thankful in Mind for the very gracious feelings with which I had been favoured and the hope of having been made a blessing to others.

Monday, 10 – Received Letters from the Committee in London – Friends in the Colony &c today – Mixed in its character. Poor Sydney I learn is still very low without much prospect of at present seeing better days. Poor White we learn from the Comee. is finally after long trial “Expelled from the Connexion”. This was what I expected, still the tidings caused my heart to mourn. Alas! My poor fallen Brother! Nothing but expressions of sympathy & kindness have been received from respecting myself. This is so far satisfactory to my own Mind. Praise God.

Sat: 15 – Have been favoured with Health of body & Peace of mind through another week, for which my Soul magnifies the Name of the Lord most high.

[Page 133]

Aug: 1838

Sunday, 16 – Waihau – Here I found about one Hundred of our people at worship when I arrived. I read to them the last Chapter in the New Testament and spoke to them at some length. All were deeply attentive and I hope some of the remarks would remain & do them good.

Afterwards spent about three hours with that strange man and his family Baron De Theire. Read to the family the 10th Chapter to the Romans, and Prayed with and for them. Both the Baron and Baroness expressed their gratitude in warm terms. May the Lord have mercy upon this family & save it!

Sat: 22 – Have spent most of this week in writing to my friends in Van Diemen's Land, and at my accounts. The former has been pleasing, the latter painful employment. Through mercy myself & family in tolerable health, excepting Mrs. Turner, who is through mercy improving. O for a heart to consecrate myself fully to my God!

Sunday, 23rd – This has been a pretty good Sabbath to my own Soul. Preached once in Native & once in English. Congregation not large.

Wed: 26 – Bro: Woon & I returned from Waihau this Evening whither we went yesterday to give Tickets to the Classes &c. Preached to a most deeply attentive congregation, and was favoured with good freedom of Soul and of Speech. Was much encouraged while renewing the Tickets with the experience of most. The Lord is certainly deeping his work in their hearts, as well as increasing their numbers.

Sunday, 30 – Was encouraged this Morning with the Native School. Heard Bro: Woon in Native in the Morning & English in the Afternoon from "What manner of Persons ought ye to be". Had good freedom in Preaching in Native this Evening from "The effectual fervent Prayer of one righteous man availeth much &c".

[Page 134]

Wed: Oct: 3rd – The Brethren Whiteley & Wallis arrived last Evening, and this Morning we commenced our District Meeting according to appointment. Just as we had opened our Meeting we received by way of the Bay communications of a most important & interesting character from the Comee. Our hearts were ready to dance for joy when we read that we were now at full liberty to reoccupy our Stations to the South and that three additional Brethren were about to be sent to our assistance. Glory be to God for thus opening our way!

Reports of Poor White's examinations and final close with the Comee. have also arrived. They are of a most painful character as regards his conduct. He has been finally expelled from our Body.

As to myself they have written in a very gratifying manner. Oh that I were more worthy of such commendation. Lord to thee be all the Praise. Amen.

Sunday, 7 – One of the most interesting and profitable days I ever spent. We had an admirable Sermon in Native this Morning from Bro: Whiteley on "Godliness is profitable to all things &c". The Chapel was crowded and full one Hundred sat outside. Never did I see a congregation appear much more interested.

After an early Dinner Bro: Wallis gave us a good Sermon in English from "There is nothing covered that shall not be revealed". The thoughts were to me original and well arranged, but he wanted energy in the Delivery.

From three to six we held a Lovefeast with the Natives, by far the best we have ever had. Many spoke much to the purpose, and gave most satisfactory proof of the genuine work of the Spirit of God in his regenerating influence upon their hearts, and

for Order and Decorum

[Page 135]

Oct: 1838

we have never before witness'd the like in New Zealand. Oh what a mighty contrast to former scenes fresh in our Memories when at Wangaroa.

Bro: Whiteley Preached us an excellent Sermon in English in the Evening from "If Children then heirs &c" And afterwards we partook of the Holy Sacrament together. A most blessed season!

Wed: 10 – At noon today we closed our District Meeting, which has been one of great interest to us all. We have contemplated, and resolved upon some important measures for the good of the poor New Zealanders. Have petitioned the Comee. for ten additional Missionaries to enable us to take up the whole line of Coast to Cooks Straits. Blessed be God we have not had one jarring string one amongst us and we have been perfectly unanimous upon every subject that has come before us. The Brethren cannot but exclaim what a contrast to gone by days. To the God of Peace be all the praise!

Thur: 11th – Left home this Morning to visit the Bay of Islands on Public business, but was much hindered by the unruliness of my Horse, and did not arrive at the Waimate until late. Received a hearty welcome from Mr. & Mrs. Clarke at whose house I stopped. Found my two Boys in good health and Spirits and all the friends well.

Friday, 12th – Rode down to the Bay this morning where I was kindly received by our Brethren at Paihia with whom I spent an agreeable evening.

Sat: 13 – Having finished my business in the Bay I returned to the Waimate designing to spend the Sabbath with our friends there. Attended their Prayer Meeting this Evening, but found it rather dry. Blessed be God for sparing me through another week!

[Page 136]

Sunday, 4th – Waimate. Heard Mr. Williams Preach an excellent Sermon to the Natives this Morning from "The Night is far spent &c" – with which I felt much interested. Afterwards Preached myself in English from "But godliness is profitable unto all things &c". Had pretty good liberty, and endeavoured to be very pointed for I feared some of my congregation had the form of Godliness but were strangers to its power. There appeared to be some strong feeling with some.

After Dinner by Mr. William's request I addressed the Sons of all the Missionaries who are here at School, and was enabled to fix their attention pretty well from "I love them that love me and they that seek me early shall find me". The Lord follow with his blessing the seed thus sown.

Heard Mr. Williams in English in the Afternoon from "Pour out your hearts before him". The matter was good but it wanted energy.

Addressed the Natives in the Evening from "The Judge is at the Door". Had a good time and never saw a Congregation more attentive.

Monday, 15 – Returned home today and was thankful to find all well, and trust the Lord will overrule this visit amongst our friends for good.

Wed: 17 – This Evening arrived by appointment Revds Messrs. H & W Williams &

Maunsell whom we gladly received in the Lord. They each engaged in Prayer at our Prayer Meeting, but their method to me is very dry, yet I believe they are all excellent men and useful in their way.

Thurs: 18 – Spent the day in consultation with our C. Brethren on the best mode of prosecuting our work harmoniously with each other, and in defining our limits in the Waikato District &c &c and

[Page 137]

Oct: 1838

trust our Meeting together will be followed by the blessing of Heaven and be the means of spreading in a more effectual way his truth through the Lord.

Sat: 20 – Our friends returned home yesterday and I have spent these two days in close attention to the Public accounts, which are somewhat perplexing on account of many Documents having been burned, but am thankful that I shall be able to make them tolerably clear. These matters though necessary to be attended to I find not congenial to the peace & prosperity of my Soul.

Sunday, 21st – Had a pretty good time at the six O'clock Prayer Meeting with the Natives, though more than a Hundred present. After Breakfast assembled all that could read, and read a Portion of Mathew with them, and afterwards questioned them upon the same. It was an interesting time. Heard Bro: Hobbs Preach in Native a good sermon to a very good and attentive congregation. After Sermon met a small Class with whom I had a good time. Met another Class of about 20 after Dinner, and Preached in English at three from the First Psalm. Preached again in Native in the Evening, and afterwards conversed at length with the Leaders & Chiefs upon various matters connected with their welfare. Retired to rest very weary but thankful for the privileges of the day.

Wed: 24 – Monday and Teusday were spent in very close application preparing the A/cs and other important Dispatches, including the District Minutes for the Committee, and this Morning we have dispatched them for the Bay to a French Man-of-war bound for Sydney. Feel thankful for having been enabled to get through these perplexing matters so satisfactory to myself. Bro: & Sister Whitely have been spending these two days with us & have returned this morning. Mrs. A. Marriner confined last night of a Son.

[Page 138]

Sat: 27 – Thanks be to God I am brought to the close of another in health and Peace. The three last days I have been variously engaged but my employments have not been a burden for I have felt a sacred delight in my work. Praise the Lord. Have had a good time this Evening from "Ye are the Crown of our rejoicing in the day of the Lord Jesus &c".

Sunday, 28 – Had a most interesting time at the Reading School this Morning. Many were present and the questions proposed and answers given excited great interest. The subject was The Rich Man and Lazarus. The Chapel was overflowing at public worship and I was favoured with great freedom in addressing them from Acts 11 – 22, 23, 24 – Oh for Missionaries like Barnabas! Several strangers, Chiefs of rank were present this morning. Blessed be God He is reviving his work.

Have made arrangements for Baptizing a good many who are Candidates, three weeks hence.

Nov. Sat: 3rd – My engagements through the week have been various – Completing my Public accounts – Preparing Duplicates for the Committee &c &c. Received this Evening a very appl. Letter from my old friend the Rev: Henry Williams, Paihia, Enclosing a Draft for £40 from himself & Brethren, towards ~~marking~~ making up my loss sustained by our late fire. This striking expression of Brotherly love I sensibly feel. May the gracious Lord reward them in his Mercy for the same.

Sunday, 4 – Felt much interested at the School this Morning – about 30 who could read were present, and about 20 many more listeners. Our subject was the “Parable of the Virgins”. Some of their answers to the questions proposed were exceedingly pleasing, and shewed that their views respecting the religion of the heart, and very clear, and their knowledge very considerable.

[Page 139]

November – 1838

The Chapel was crowded at Public service, and I was favoured with good freedom in addressing them from “If any man will be my Disciple &c &c” – Mark 8. Never did I see a cong. hang much more intensely upon the lips of a Preacher. O may the truths be written on their hearts by the Holy Spirit! I long for their Salvation. Afterwards with Bro: Woon met some of the Candidates for Baptism, who I hope are in earnest about their Souls.

My Soul was again refreshed this afternoon while speaking to our little English audience from “Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free”.

Heard Bro: Woon in the Evening, and afterwards spent some time conversing with some of the Leaders on various subjects connected with their souls, their Classes, &c and then retired sufficiently wearied but grateful in soul.

Sat: 10 – Through the abounding mercy of my heavenly Father am brought to the close of another week in safety, in tolerable health of Body & Peace of Mind. Have had considerable exercise of mind at times relative to the movements of the popish party amongst the people, but blessed be God have received pleasing intelligence today that some who we feared were gone have declared for Christ and us his Servant.

Sunday, 11th – Most pleasing Meeting this Morning at the Reading Meeting – our subject was the “Parable of the Talents”. Much interest was excited by the questions proposed and answers given. Many were present. Bro: Hobbs Preached a good sermon in Native in the Morning. Addressed our English Congn. in the afternoon & the Natives in the Evening but was not so free as on some occasions. Our people I hope have had a good day.

[Page 140]

Sat: 17 – This has been a week of interest to me. My Schools Morning & Evening have been well attended and gave me much pleasure. Have suffered a good deal from Rheumatism in my face & Gums. Letters arrived last Evening from England and the Colony of an important character. Poor White is returning as a Trader and may be hourly expected here. His coming may seriously affect our Mission, should he come as an opponent. But the Lord

reigneth.

We have been exceedingly busy today preparing our Candidates for baptism tomorrow. We have upwards of 160 adults & Children.

Sunday, 18th – A most interesting Day. Never before was such a Congregation at Mangangu. We suppose there was at least one Thousand Souls present. Hundreds could not find admittance into the chapel. Many were here for the first time and had come from afar. Devout attention rested upon every countenance while Bro: Hobbs addressed them from “Go ye into all the world &c”. It was really affecting to see them literally lining the Chapel round from end to side getting into the windows, and upon the rising ground above that they might look through the same. After Sermon we Baptized 138 Adults and more than forty Children. Several of these were Chiefs of Rank and some of them had been amongst the most hardened of their Race, but the Gospel has subdued them. Bro: Hobbs were particularly gratified from the circumstance of several of these having been amongst those to whom we first Preached the Gospel in New Zealand, but who had until of late stood out against the truth. Glory to God for what he has brought.

[Page 141]

Nov: 1838

The Afternoon Service in English was to me very interesting. I addressed my Countryman &c from “I will lift up mine eyes unto the hills from whence cometh my help”. After Sermon in the Evening we married near thirty couples. Thus ended the services of this most interesting Sabbath. It was our intention to have had the Sacrament, but alas! our wine was all consumed by the fire.

Sat: 24th – Have spent nearly the whole of this week in writing to the Comee. on very important subjects connected with the interests of the Mission generally, and also the Civil and Political condition of New Zealand generally.

Sunday 25th – Found the means today profitable to my Soul. Was favoured while addressing the Natives this Morning from “I am He that was Dead and am alive again &c – and have the Keys of Death & Hell”. Referred to the Popish Purgatory – Peter having the Keys &c”. These wretched perverters of real Christianity have already commenced their instze. the people in this destructive error. I endeavoured to shew them that it had no foundation in the Scripture, and that it laid aside the truth of God. My remarks appeared to excite much interest. May the Lord in mercy save this people of the curse of Popery!

Addressed our little Congregation in English from our Lord casting out the “Legion of Devils” who entered the Swine. How wretched the congregadition of that people who are thus the influence of these Malignant Spirits – and how dreadful then must be the region of the Damned. O may I be saved from every evil, and be preserved to the Everlasting! Then danger of every kind will be forever past.

[Page 142]

Decr. 1838

Sat: 1st – About Twenty Minutes after Twelve (Midnight) The Lord granted unto my dear wife his delivering Mercy in the hour of Natures sorrow. After some hours strong labour, she was safely delivered of a very fine Daughter, our twelfth Child, two of whom have safely passed into the Heavens, leaving us living five sons, and five Daughters. An important charge! May I feel it aright and properly discharge the

Relative duties devolving upon me! Have had a good deal of painful exercise this week arising out of the proceedings of our Catholic Neighbours. Bro: Wallis has been greatly abused by one of their party, and we hear painful things from other quarters. The Bishop has has a very insinuating manner, and flattering address, and distributes freely Medals, Crosses &c &c which have an entangling effect. Oh that this poor people may be saved from Popery.

Have suffered much this week from Rheumatism in my Teeth and Gums. And my eldest Daughter is very unwell. With Patience arm my breast”.

Sunday, 2nd – A comparatively barren day to my soul. Only spoke once to the Natives. Heard Mr. Woon both Morning & Afternoon. After Afternoon Service he baptized Mr. Marriner’s infant son.

Heard that Mr. White had this Evening arrived with his family, and several others as Emmigrants. Oh that his coming may be overruled for good – But we fear.

Sat: 8th – Have had much painful exercise this week arising out of affairs connected with our Society and that of the C.M. Society – Our Native Teachers clashing in their operations &c. – Their Missionaries complaining. Hence I have written plainly, though app’g. to them. W. is peaceable at present. All are in the hands of God. May he overrule them all for good.

[Page 143]

Decr. 1838

Sunday, 9th – Had a very interesting time this Morning at the School while questioning them on the Parable of the “Prodigal Son”, great interest was excited among them.

The Chapel was tolerably well filled at ten, and Bro: Hobbs gave them a good (but long) Sermon from the “Strait Gate”.

Mr. & Mrs. White were present with several strangers who have accompanied them to this country. I felt much for my old Fellow Labourer, while reflecting on his deeply humbled condition. Formerly at the head of affairs here carrying every thing with a high hand at pleasure now Alas! poor Man he has neither part nor lot in the matter. In his case we may exclaim “How are the mighty fallen”! After Sermon he met me to give me his hand which was done but not a word. The same with Mrs. W.

Preached with good freedom in English in the afternoon from “Wherefore he is able to save to the uttermost &c” The attendance was good. Several of the strangers were present. Was again favoured with liberty in the Evening while addressing the Natives from the First Chapter of Hebrews.

Sat: 15th – Have had a good deal of exercise this week relative to – W – who has sent his Brother to me and also written to know what steps I intend to take in order to justify his character from charge preferred against him by us to our Comee. and upon which he has been tried, found Guilty, and expelled the connexion. Unhappy Man! I have replied by stating that I can know nothing of these matters that are past officially, but that I am willing to converse with him as a private individual. May the gracious Lord in Mercy prevent his wicked designs, and overrule all for his Glory.

Have been poorly in health for several days, scarce able to move about and some of the children are very poorly.

[Page 144]

Sunday, 16th – Spent the day from home amongst the people up the River, had two

little native Congregations and one English, consisting of four Persons only. Also met two small Classes. Felt encouragement in my work, and trust my feeble efforts were not in vain.

Teusday, 18th – Returned from the Waimate this Evening with my two Boys Thomas and John, the School having broken up. Found them and nearly every Individual both European & Native unwell with the Influenza. Several of our friends were very poorly, especially Mr. Clarke and one of his children.

Sunday, 23rd – Attempted to Preach to the Natives this Morning, but had hard work to do so being very unwell of the prevailing Epidemic, Influenza, and the Natives (the few that were present) were so ill that I could scarce be heard for their continual coughing. My Brethren were both ill also. Indeed we have scarce an Individual who is not laid up with it. O may it be sanctified to our good.

Teusday, 25th – Christmas Day. The most distressing one I ever experienced on account of Sickness. All laid up. Scarcely any attended Chapel. Bro: Hobbs gave us a short Sermon in the Afternoon in English from “The word was made flesh and dwelt among us &c” but few were present. Got my heart a little affected

Sat: 29 – Had an interview yesterday with poor Mr. W. (Bro. Hobbs accompanied me.) We met in the Bush and had a good deal of conversation about certain matters of which he complains, but I shewed him that I was not able to alter my views for that they were founded upon facts, principally of his own shewing &c. Poor fellow he seems to want something done as he says to clear his character, but Alas! for him his affairs will not bear the light. He kept his temper pretty well.

[Page 145]

1838

Sunday, 30th – Although exceedingly unwell went up the River this Morning to visit the poor sick Natives, and at every Kainga or Village found nearly every individual at every place laid up with the prevailing Epidemic Influenza. Administered medicine to their Bodies as far as my stock would go. Gave them at each place a word of spiritual advice, and returned home exceedingly unwell. This is a time of severe trial to us all, but to the poor Natives very afflictive.

Monday, 31st – The closing day of 1838. A year of great Trial, but of greater Mercy to me as we have as a family been litterally saved from the devouring Element – and otherwise the Mercy of our Heavenly Father has graciously rescued us, my dear Wife in particular from the verge of the Grace. But oh! how poor my returns, how cold my love to my most gracious God! I have cause to hide myself in the dust before him. May he have mercy upon me. Could not hold a watch night in consequence of the general sickness. Judged it improper to call the poor Natives together, and it was under considerable suffering that I with several others attended a Prayer Meeting. I gave a few words of exhortation from “But the end of all things is at hand &c”. The Lord was graciously present to refresh our Souls.

Reverend Nath Turner

[Page 146]

Journal for Eighteen Hundred and 39

January 1st – I thank the giver of my Life for sparing me his unworthy Servant to the commencement of another year. Am reminded however from present indisposition of Body that “Here I have no continuing City”. My frame is exceedingly feeble, and also my dear wife with several of the Children are very unwell. The Lord knows what is best for us and will not lay upon us more than we can bear.

Received a native Letter this afternoon informing me of the Death of Haimona Pita Matangi of Utakina, a Chief of the first Rank, and a sincere Christian. His conduct has been in general very circumspect since I have been here, and have frequently had my Spirit refreshed while talking to him and Praying with him. When I parted with him yesterday he was sensibly affected the tears fast trickled down his Cheeks while I talked w him and commended him to the Almighty, but did not then apprehend that he was so nigh his everlasting home. He has doubtless safely passed into the heavens there to be forever with the Lord. His family and Class of which he had been for some years Leader will feel his loss greatly. O may I be found ready! Amen.

Sat: 5th – Although very unwell ventured down the River to Pakanae on Wedy. and returned on Thursday. Found many of the people there as everywhere else very unwell of the Influenza. A Chief of Wirinaki informed me that the Catholic Bishop had told them that none of his Pupils would be sick, but said the

[Page 147]

man, He is a Liar, for they are all now down with the sickness. Returned home very poorly but thankful to finding family better. Was so unwell yesterday that I could not according to my Promise & wish go to Bury poor old Haimona, but Bro: Woon went in my stead. Feel a little better today, and hope I shall yet be spared to serve my family, the Church & the world. May I be fully Sanctified to God, and fully prepared for his will to live or to Die! Amen.

Sunday 6th – Addressed the Natives this Morn from “Let no man take thy Crown &c”. The few present were very attentive.

Preached in English in the afternoon from “Neither is there any Creature that is not manifest in his sight, but &c” Congn. not large, but attentive. Did not feel much at home.

After Sermon Mr. Hobbs Baptized our infant Daughter Hannah Jane. May the gracious Lord Baptize her with his Spirit, and may She become a Mother in Israel if spared!

Sat: 12 – Am brought in safety through another week of varied exercise and trial. My mind at times has been very low and ready to sink beneath its burden. The circumstances of the Mission affect me very much. Things are by no means as I could [indecipherable].

In health, as a family, we are much better and most of our poor people are recovering.

Sunday, 13 – Spent the greater part of the Day amongst the Natives up the Utakina Valley. Found several very Sick to whom I administered medicine. Collected a pretty good cong. who listened with deep attention while I spoke to them on “Lord remember me when thou comest into thy Kingdom”.

[Page 148]

Preached in English in the Evening and was favoured with pretty good Liberty. Afterwards administered the Lord’s Supper to the few who were present. We had a

gracious time.

Sat: 19 – This has been a week of more than common excitement & Trial to my mind insomuch so that I have been ready at times to sink beneath my burden. My Predecessor – W – who has returned with malignant feelings and is labouring to defame our character &c by making most false statements to the poor Natives in order to raise himself in their estimation. My soul grieves within me at his base conduct but the Lord reigns and will defend his cause.

On Tuesday Evening the Elizabeth came up the River with our long expected supplies, since which we have been exceedingly busy getting things on shore &c.

Sunday, 20 – A laborious but profitable day to my Soul. The Lord melted my heart in the ordinances of his house especially at the English service which was very well attended.

Sat: 26 – Thank God I am brought in Peace and safety to the close of one of the busiest weeks of my life, arising out of getting our goods on Shore, transhipping for the Waikato Stations &c for which places we have taken up the Elizh. Oh how I long to be freed from these cares. May the Lord save and guide me aright!

27, Sunday – Enjoyed the Sabbath. Though very poorly in Body my mind was tolerably free in my work. I addressed the Natives in the Morning from “Let not your heart be troubled &c”. They were very attentive and I hope felt what was said. Had a pretty good attendance on our English service. And I felt the truth of the text “But it is good for me to draw near unto God”.

[Page 149]

1838 Feby.

Sat: 2nd – Through the mercy of my heavenly Father I am brought in safety to the close of another week during which I have some painful exercise of mind, as well a good deal of pain & weakness of Body.

On Wednesday I committed to the grave the Remains of Weiamu Wunce, a Chief of the first Rank at Mangamuka. He was a man of truly peaceful Spirit, such as is not often found in New Zealand. We believe he was a sincere Christian man and left the world in a very pleasing manner. This is the Third Chief that has been taken from us within a few weeks. May we hear the warning voice!

On Thursday my two Boys Thos. & John returned to School at the Waimate.

Sunday, 3rd – Pulled up to the Karai this morning after School, but found only three persons there. Held a little service with them and returned home as soon as possible, the rain beginning to fall very heavily. Heard part of Mr. Woon’s Sermon in English, after which I baptized his infant Son – James Garland – may he become a man of God. Had a good time with my Class.

Sat: 9 – Have been the subject of powerful exercise this week, principally through the hypocritical conduct of White who has been writing most abominable untruths respecting me and my brethren. His reign however we believe is nearly at an end. Unhappy Man! he has been quarrelling with one of his European Mechanics whom he brought with him from England, and their quarrel all but ended in his Murder. The Carpenter struck him on the Head with a Hammer twice, and he was obliged to be held by three Men from Murdering the Carpenter with an Adze. This with other

[Page 150]

circumstances has led to the opening of the eyes of those who have laboured hard to be his friends, and to disbelieve all the evil we have had to report against him. On Thursday I committed to the Dust the remains of Cap: Saddler, of the Ship Coromandel. He was ill before the ship arrived in this Harbour. He has been on Shore for several weeks at the Marta. He wished to see me to converse with him about his Soul but such was the Malice of Wm. White that he would not allow me to come near the place. What an awful account will he have to render!

Sunday, 10th – This has been a refreshing day to my Soul. Was favoured with gracious influence while addressing the Natives from “None of us liveth unto himself &c” – and in the afternoon had my heart again quickened while shewing to my Countrymen that Religion & real enjoyment are inseparably connected from “Acquaint now thyself with him and be at peace, thereby good shall come unto thee”. Accompanied Mr. Forsayth on board the Coromandel in the Evening where I was favoured with one of the best seasons I ever had in my life while addressing the Sailors from “Moses lifting up the Serpent in the wilderness”. I trust the word was conveyed with power to their hearts.

Monday 11th – Was grieved with another communication from W this Morning, which I endeavoured to answer with kindness, but at the same time assured him that I would have no more to do with him in the way he wished. Mr. Forsayth has spent most of the day with me freely unbosoming his Mind. He knows not what step to take, but has fully determined to leave White. He has offered himself to me to be employed in the Mission any way. May the gracious Lord direct his steps!

[Page 151]

Feby. 1839

Sat: 16th – Bro: Hobbs & Dr. Day returned from the Bay last Evening, bring over with them Papers, Letters &c from England and the Colony, containing information that four new Brethren may be expected here in a very short time in the James. O may they come in the fullness of the vessel of the Gospel of Christ. I am still continued I find from the Stations in charge of the Mission. May the gracious Lord direct my steps aright!

Sunday, 17 – Was favoured with good freedom today both amongst the Natives and my Countrymen. To the latter on the Station I spoke from “The Lord preserveth all them that love him, but all the wicked will He destroy” – and in the Evening on board the Coromandel from the “Prodigal Son”.

Monday 18th – Left home in Company with Dr. Day and a Mr. Uhr for Kaipara, where we arrived on Thursday just in time to accompany Bro: & Sister Wallis down to the Elizh. by which they proceed to Waingarua. Got on board by sun down and the wind being unfavourable for us we remained on board with our friends until

Sunday 24 – Sailed across the great Wairoa twenty miles up the Omawara to visit a part of Parore’s people who with Mr. Stephenson accompanied us down. Met about sixty People who received us with real pleasure, and had a most interesting season while addressing them from “Lord remember me when thou comest into thy Kindom &c”. The big Tear rolled won my cheek. Had a good deal of conversation with them and then retired to rest encouraged in Spirit.

Monday, 25 – Assembled the People and gave them another address, after which Baptized

[Page 152]

three Children and then we left this truly interesting spot. Was highly delighted with the Country. Many beautiful spots we passed very eligible for Farms or Towns &c. Spent a short time with a few people at another settlement belonging to the Pakanae Tribe who had gone there to plant food in the expectation that ships would be coming in to Trade with them. The wind being dead against us we did not enter the Otamatea River before dark, but we fortunately came up to Tiraran's Tribe about seven miles up with whom we encamped for the night, but our Quarters were of a very uneasy description. No Hut nor Tent but our Lads made a kind of break wind with our Boat Sail, and we rested pretty well.

Teusday 26 – After spending some time in talking to the People we returned accompanied by Tiraran the Chief. Was truly astonished as well as pleased to find the Otamatea so fine a River, and the Country around appears far superior to most parts of New Zealand I have seen. The wind being unfavourable we only got about 30 miles on our return up the Wairoa when we again encamped under our Boat Sail but was favoured with refreshing repose until day again dawned upon us.

Wed: 27 – By one we got up to Mr. Stephenson's where we got refreshed by a good wash, change of linen &c for we had found ourselves very uncomfortable bushing it so long.

At 7 A.M. With the flowing Tide we set off for Mr. Buller the Mission Station distant about 35 Miles where we arrived a little before midnight.

[Page 153]

Our friends soon arose to give us a hearty reception to their abode, to which they had but themselves just arrived.

Thursday, 28 – Spent a very agreeable day with our friends, and to our great surprise just before sun down the Rev: H. Williams from the Bay of Islands arrived. Was exceedingly glad to see my old friend & spent a very agreeable Eveng. with him. He had left home with the same object as myself, to visit the Natives in the neighbouring settlements and had come on thus much out of his way to see Tiraran, who has been exceedingly tried through some of his people listening to Pikopo – the Catholic Bishop who has found his way amongst them, and caused a good deal of trouble in the Tribe. O may this people be saved from the curse of Popery.

Friday – March 1st – Bade this interesting spot and our kind friends Farewell, and came down the River to Mr. Stephenson's accompanied by Messrs. Williams & Buller. Had my soul quickened & comforted this Evening while he saying the Throne of grace for Myself, Brethren and the world at large. God was very gracious.

Sat: 2 – Came on to Kaihu there to spend the Sabbath. This is one of the most delightful vallies I ever saw. My good friend Dr. Day has resolved upon making it his future abode. He this Evening agreed with Parore the Chief for an extensive Portion in the Valley intending to go home and return with several of his Wesleyan friends with him, there to commence a little Wesleyan Colony. I shall feel thankful if the Scheme succeeds believing it will do much good in the land.

[Page 154]

Sunday, 3rd – Had a very interesting day with the people here at Kaihu. Their attention was truly fixed while I addressed them morning & Evening. Catechised them in the Afternoon, & also heard many of them state what the Lord was doing for their Souls. Indeed I had scarce a moments leisure from morning till night when I retired quite weary in Body, but rejoicing in God my Saviour.

Teusday 5th – About 11 this Evening got home in safety, and was very thankful to find my family and friends all in tolerable health, and things going on as well as could be expected. Two vessels have arrived from Sydney by which Letters &c have been received – one from new Brethren we expected will soon be here.

Sat: 9 – Have had much to do since my return in writing, Trading with the Natives &c &c especially today - many having come with their produce to trade and to be ready for the services of the morrow.

Sunday 10 – Had pretty good attendance at the six oclock Prayer Meeting but felt the Meeting to be rather heavy. The attendance at the adult School was encouraging but did not feel that interest which I have generally [indecipherable]. Bro: Hobbs read Prayers & I Preached to a good Congregation, but did not feel free. Had a pretty good attendance & encouraging time at our English Service – and again in the Evening spoke with freedom on board the Coromandel from “The wages of Sin is Death &c”. The people listened with great attention, and I hope with some feeling, but was grieved with several who had been on shore and got intoxicated who made some disturbance while I was speaking.

[Page 155]

March – 1839

Sat: 16 – A week of varied labour and varied excitement, some things painful & others pleasing. Amongst the latter have been the very gracious influence resting upon our Meetings for Prayer and Class. Mr. Frances White & wife attended the latter and also Mrs. Wm. W was again present. Thank God they are beginning to see things aright and I hope we shall see better days in the land still.

Sunday 17 – A day of labour and enjoyment. Was much interested at the School, and was favoured with liberty in addressing the people and meeting several Classes for Tickets. Spoke with freedom and I hope profit to our little English Congregation who were deeply attentive.

Heard Miramu Patene (Wm. Barton) a Native youth in the Evening and was very pleased with both his matter and manner. He is a very promising young man.

Teusday 19 – Arrived the James, Captain Todd bringing our long expected Brethren. We hailed with sacred delight Mr. Bumby and his Sister, Messrs. Creed & Ironside with their wives. I like their appearance, and trust they will be found proper Spirits for the Missionary work.

Mr. Warren whom we expected is left behind in Van Deimens Land in the room of Mr Hobbs who is to continue in this Mission.

Have received by the Brethren several very pleasing Letters from the Secretaries expressing of their entire approbation of my proceeding while in charge of this Mission. This is pleasing. They leave me at liberty to remove back to Van Deimens Land but wish me to remain here nearly twelve months more to help the new Brethren in commencing their work.

[Page 156]

Many pleasing Letters have come to hand from our numerous friends in Hobart Town who appear very desirous for my return amongst them. Thank God for the affection of so many good men and for the interest manifested in my welfare.

Sat: 23 – Have been exceedingly busy all week with the new Brethren – getting their goods in Store &c &c. Have been kept in a holy, happy state of mind. At Class last Evening was much blessed God was graciously present with us. Mr. Bumby led the Meeting, and I could not but admire his Talents and Glorify the grace of God in him. Have given Tickets to six Classes today with much other exercise from which I feel great weariness of body – ready to sink, but the Lord strengthens me for my work.

Sunday, 24th – Had a large attendance of Natives at the early Prayer Meeting this Morning, and never in any tongue did I listen to more appropriate addresses to the Throne of Mercy than from several of these lately converted Heathen. I found it good to draw near to that God who hears the humble cry.

School as usual with the adults & good attendance. At 11 A.M. the congregation was overflowing. I read Prayers & Bro: Hobbs Preached an appropriate Sermon on the Sacrament. The attention of the people was good, and the Truths I hope will remain with them.

The notorious Kaitoke (worm eater) was present for the first time; at the close of the service I called upon Miramu Patene (Wm. Barton) to Pray, who in Prayer remembered Kaitoke, and affectingly prayed that God would give him a new heart. Here was literally a Praying for his enemy. O what a change has the Gospel wrought in the heart of this young man!

[Page 157]

March – 1839

Our English Service was well attended and Mr. Bumby gave us a most excellent Sermon from “I have learned in whatsoever I am therewith to be content”. He is a very superior Preacher. O may his coming here be an eternal blessing to many! I addressed the Natives in the Evening, and afterwards we administered the Sacrament to about two Hundred communicants - the Brethren & Sisters who have lately arrived partaking with them. It was a very interesting season. The conduct of the Natives was very becoming. It afforded me great satisfaction to hear Mr. Bumby who has come to take charge frequently say that the Natives were far in advance of what he had expected.

Sat: 30 – This has been another week of confused labour & exercise arising out of circumstances over which I have had no control. Have been considerably exercised as to our proceedings with the Brethren intended for the South. The Cap: of the James has declined taking them to their Station, and I now fear we shall not be able to move with them until after winter. This will be a great affliction to my mind, and I fear an hindrance to our cause. But the Lord has the ships as well as the winds & waves at his command & under his control.

On Thursday accompanied Mr. Woon & family down to Pakanae. Captain Sayers of the Francis Spaight kindly took us down in his Boat. Bro: Creed accompanied us. Good Friday – Held a little service with the few Natives who assembled at Newark in the morning and afterwards returned home.

[Page 158]

April – 1839

Sunday 31st – Was much encouraged at the Native Service this Morning, the congregation was pretty good and my mind was very free and well affected while I addressed them from “Thus it is written and thus it behoved Christ to suffer &c” The natives seemed deeply impressed. Heard Mr. Creed in the afternoon from “I beseech you Brethren by the Mercies of God that ye present your Bodies a living Sacrifice &c”, a plain good Sermon but I should have been better pleased had there been more energy – more apparent zeal – May the Lord clothe his servants with zeal as with a Cloak!

Sat: April 6 – On Wednesday Evening had a very severe attack of affliction very similar to Cholera but by the blessing of God upon the means after eight or ten Hours severe suffering I obtained relief. It has left me very weak and low.

Sunday, 7 – Though very poorly in Body, enjoyed the services of the Sanctuary very much. It was a gracious day to me & others. Mr. Ironside gave us an excellent Sermon in English in the afternoon from “It behoved him for whom are all things and by whom are all things in bringing many sons unto glory &c &c” – and in the Evening heard Mr. Creed with considerable interest from “And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God &c”. O may the gracious fruit remain and ripen into glory!

Sat: 13 – My strength has been increasing through the week, and I have been endeavouring to devote it to good through secular purchases in preparing the new House for our reception and straightening the premises around. Today we have moved into our new abode although but in a very unprepared state, but we have felt very anxious on account of our new Brethren

[Page 159]

April – 1839

The Brethren Hobbs & Bumby returned from the Bay last Evening but could obtain no vessel to convey them to the South which was the object of their visit. Our way for the present appears [indecipherable] up, but the Lord reigneth & can make our way plain.

Sunday 14 – Crossed the River this Morning in company with Mr. Bumby to visit the Chief Nau and his people, but found him as usual much opposed to the truth and strongly disposed to object to the subject I was bringing before them - “Paul’s” conversion, but was enabled to keep him in temper.

Heard Mr. Bumby this afternoon with great plea from “And he led them by a right way that he might bring them to a city of Habitation” – an excellent Sermon. His leading ideas were – That xtns are all Pilgrims – That God himself is the Leader of His people – That the way in which he leads them is the right way – That he thus leads them in order that he may bring them to a City of Habitation.

Gave a service of exhortation in the Evening in our new House from “As ye have therefore received C.J. the L so walk ye in him”. The room was very full, the people attentive, and the feeling good.

Teusday 16 – Held a special Meeting this Morning to ascertain what steps we should now take relative to visiting the Tribes in Cooks Straits, Taranaki &c. The Natives object to going by land at this advanced season of the year and we have resolved upon engaging a little vessel if possible to go down & visit the people and fix upon a suitable place on which to commence operations in the Spring. May the Lord direct

our steps aright!

Sat: 20 – Have visited Pakanae & Wirinaki this week in company with Mr. Bumby. The people seemed very friendly to us

[Page 160]

Sunday, 21 – A day of pleasure & profit to my own Soul – was graciously favoured with freedom in addressing large congregations both Morning & Evening, on the latter occasion especially while speaking from “Him that overcometh will I give to sit down with me on my throne &c” – Good feeling!
Mr. Bumby gave us a most excellent Sermon in the Evening on “Communion”, “From between the Cherubims will I meet with thee &c”.

Sat: 27 – Have laboured hard with my hands this week at various matters about our new premises – and my mind has been painfully exercised on various matters of personal experience and the affairs of the Church. The Lord is good and bears with my infirmities. Oh for a heart to praise him as I ought!

Sunday, 28th – Accompanied by the Brethren Bumby & Creed went up the Mangamuka this morning, and found about a Hundred People just assembled for worship at the Pukahau to whom I spoke with freedom from “Lord remember me when thou comest into Thy Kingdom &c”. They were very attentive. As we returned Bro: Creed spoke to a few Europeans assembled at Joseph Wrights from “The Kingdom of God is not meat & Drink &c” – and afterwards Mr. Bumby gave an excellent exhortation, with Peter I can exclaim “Master it is good to be here”. Dined with Mr. Cochrane & returned Home, but not in time as expected to Preach to the Natives in the Evening. Mr. Bumby gave us a most excellent Sermon in the Evening on the Intercession of the Lord Jesus from “And I saw as it had been a Lamb newly slain &c”. He is certainly one of the best Preachers I ever heard. The Lord bless and make him a blessing to Thousands! Amen.

[Page 161]

May – 1839

Sat: 4th – Having received the painful intelligence of my eldest Boy having fallen from a scaffold at the Waimate and received some injury, went on Wednesday to see him, but was thankful to find the injury sustained was not serious. Had not the Lord mercifully prevented it might have hurried him speedily to an early grave. Observing a change in the weather hastened back on Thursday and got home before the Rain came on.

Several of my Children are now very poorly with Coughs & Fever, but trust the Lord will deal gently with them. May I be resigned to his will in all things!

Sunday 5th – Preached twice today to the Natives, attended School, met two Classes, and heard two Sermons in English - Mr. Creed in the afternoon from “God so loved the world &c – He wanted life – Mr. Bumby in the Evening from “Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart &c”. A most heart stirring, soul reviving Sermon. Truly it was Spirit and life to my waiting Soul!

Sat: 11 – Early in the week had serious thoughts of going by the James to Hobart Town and devoted sometime in the way of preparation but when it came to a point my excellent successor feeling the circumstances in which he should be placed could not give his consent, and have agreed to remain few months longer in the land.

We have just entered into an engagement with a Mr. Foresaith a pious a young man and who has a most amiable wife to commence another Station upon a small scale in another part of the Kaipara District. I pray that this also may be crowned with the blessing of Heaven.

[Page 162]

Sunday, 12 – Accompanied by Messrs. Creed and Foresaith went up the Mangamuka this morning and while they had service with the Europeans I went over to Omakura and had an interesting service with about thirty people whom I found already engaged in their morning service. I spoke to them with great freedom from “I am the bread of life &c”.

Returned in time to hear Mr. Ironside who Preached a very good sermon from “We all with open face behold as in a glass the glory of the Lord are changed &c”. But in the Evening I was raised almost to the third Heaven in hearing Mr. Bumby from “But now they desire a better country &c”. Such a glowing description of Canaan & of Heaven I never before heard. O it was truly delightful, and I could not but long to be there. May the gracious fruit [indecipherable] in!

Monday, 13 – This morning the Brethren, Brumby & Hobbs, left us for the Bay, there to embark in the Schooner Hokianga to visit the Tribes in Cooks Straits – Taranaki our Station at Waimate. May the great Head of the Church go with them & make their voyage prosperous! They have taken with many xtn natives of whom they will leave as Teachers amongst the Tribes they will visit.

Sat: 18 – This has been a week of exercise, labour & care. Mr. & Mrs. Foresaith left us on Wednesday for Kaipara. May the Lord go with them.

This evening have received Letters from [indecipherable] who has a delightful prospect of success, but feels [indecipherable] his [indecipherable] of a house &c. Poor Bro: Whiteley has been bereaved of their only son – but God is good!

[Page 163]

May – 1839

Sunday, 19 – This has been a pretty good Sabbath to me. The cong. was good in the Morning and I addressed them with pretty good freedom. After service met one Class, and then Buried a child belonging to one of our people. Heard Mr. Creed in the afternoon from “Behold the Lamb of God &c”. Preached in English in the Evening from “The way of life is ~~the~~ above to the wise, that he may depart from Hell beneath”.

Sat: 25 – Thank God for bringing me in health and peace to the close of another week which has been to me one of considerable trial. Some of our Domestic have been exceedingly trying.

Have written numerous Letters this week to my friends in Van Deimen’s Land to go by the James, which is now ready for Sea.

Sunday, 26 – Was favoured with more than usual liberty in addressing a most attentive congregation from “Ye are God’s Husbandry, ye are God’s building &c &c”. The truths delivered appeared to fall with weight upon all and I trust it will be as seed sown on good ground.

Met two Classes, and then Preached in English from “Let him know that he which converteth a sinner from the error of his ways &c”, but was not free in my own soul. Moses Fawai addressed the people in the Evening and I listened to Mr. Ironside in English from “In this Mountain will the Lord of Hosts make a feast of fat things for all

Nations &c", but he did not succeed so well as when I have heard him before. May I feast in Paradise at the last!

[Page 164]

June – 1839

Sat: 1 – By the good Providence of my God I am brought in health, in peace, & safety to the close of another week, and commencement of another month. Have had some keen exercises this week both from within & without but "out of all the Lord hath brought me by his love, and still he doth his help afford and hides my life above". But I mourn my unfaithfulness before him. Why is it my soul is not more inflamed with heavenly love, and my life more fully devoted to my God?

Sunday, 2 – Was favoured with happy freedom this Morning in addressing the Natives on the "Blessedness of those who are called to the Marriage supper of the Lamb". The attendance was good and the interest excited was great. May the Eternal Spirit make his own word successful!

Heard Mr. Creed in English in the afternoon from "The Lord God is a sun & shield &c", and in the Evening Mr. Ironside gave us a good Sermon from "We have not an High Priest who cannot be trusted with the feelings of our Infirmities &c". We had a mighty feeling afterwards while pleading with the Lord for his blessing on his word.

Sat: 8 – Have spent much of this week in attempting to compose a few additional new Hymns & convert some of our old ones, and blessed be God have felt my heart much warmed and encouraged in my work. The Lord has been eminently nigh in our Prayer Meetings & Class Meetings this week – our souls have been greatly melted and blessed together. O that my heart were filled with God! and all my life fully devoted to his Glory – Amen. Lord help thy Servant.

[Page 165]

June 1839

Sunday 9 – The day very sick & unfavourable yet the Congregation was good & deeply attentive while I Preached to them "Running the Christian race looking to Jesus &c", Heb. 12. Was very weak & poorly in Body but the Lord gave me strength. Afterwards gave Tickets to two Classes, and found it good to be there with God. The Evening becoming so wet we had to put off the Sacrament to another Sabbath. Spent the Evening very profitably with my family.

Sat: 15 – My engagements have been various during this week and some of them trying both to my Body and Mind, but blessed be God I am brought to its close in safety & peace. God has been very gracious to me.

Today I have been happily employed in giving Tickets to Eight Classes and had a good time in Preaching to the People from the text on the Quarterly Ticket, "Help us O God of our Salvation for the Glory of thy Name &c".

Glory be to God my soul I trust is growing in grace. Have had a blessed quickening this week.

Sunday, 16 – A day of exhausting labour but much profit to my Soul. Preached to a large and deeply attentive congregation from "But the Lord is not slack concerning his Promises &c", Peter. Met classes for Tickets all afternoon and with some was much interested. The people are I hope growing in grace.

Preached to my Brethren & families in the Evening from Our Lord's Agony in the

Garden, and afterwards we partook of the Holy Sacrament together. It was a time of much spiritual feeling. We all felt that it was good for us thus to draw near to our God.

[Page 166]

Sat: 22 – Have been very poorly of cold much of the week. On Teusday went over to the Waimate to fetch home my [indecipherable] and there I found Mr. Busby the British Resident and several other friends with whom I spent an agreeable Evening. Fearing rain [indecipherable] come in I returned on the Wednesday but before we got home the Rain began to fall in torrents from which I took severe cold but was thankful to see my Lads safe and [indecipherable] once more. While they have improved in their education fear they have not become more Spiritually minded.

Sunday, 23 – My cold was so bad this morning that it was with difficulty I addressed the people. Met three Classes for Tickets in the afternoon and spent the Evening with my family.

Sat: 29 – This has been a very wet & stormy week, and my health has been so bad that I have scarce dared before today to venture out, but have been enabled to devote a good deal of attention to my Accounts and to have them in a state of readiness for winding up, whenever required.

Thank God my health is considerably better this Evening and hope to be able to attend to the services of the morrow with comfort.

Sunday, 30 – Found it very good this Morning while addressing the Natives from “Because my Servant Caleb had another Spirit with him &c”. The day became so exceedingly wet that we could scarce raise another congregation in the after part of the day. The Bark Francis Spaight arrived and brought Letters &c for us from the Colony.

[Page 167]

1839

6th – Blessed be God I am brought in peace to the close of another week, and in an improved state of health. Have been actively & profitably engaged through the week both for Body & Soul. Yesterday, accompanied by Mr. Ironside went to Mangamuka, and committed to the Dust the remains of Sarah wife of Isaac Paterson, a good man. Her spirit has peaceably fled to the mansions of Light & Glory. Felt it solemn and suitable to be thus brought to the House of Mourning. One of the Relatives wept much, yet still this sorrow was not as those who have no hope. This is to me a lamentable consideration that many of our very best Xtian Natives are rapidly passing the bounds of time.

Messengers have this week arrived from the [north or south], and their statements relative to the anxieties of the people there for Books & Teachers is truly exciting. They state that in some places [indecipherable] they have no Books they are actually tearing a few leaves from their more highly [indecipherable] Neighbours who have got a Book. Glory be to God for what he has done and is doing!

Sunday, 7 – Addressed the Natives this Morning on the first part of the history of Joseph and his Brethren, and again from the same subject in the Evening. They were deeply attentive, and appeared much interested. Heard Mr. Ironside preach a

good Sermon in English in the afternoon & in the Evening conducted another English service myself and found it very profitable. Came up the River this morning the Elizabeth [indecipherable] that took our Missionaries to the South. Very wet unfavourable day.

[Page 168]

Sat: 13 – Blessed be my God for bringing me in safety to the close of another week. My health is improved but my dear wife is very poorly, also our youngest child, but the Lord is wise and knows what is best for us. We are now in the depth of Winter, and the weather is exceedingly wet and cold.

Sunday, 14th – The attendance has been very good and I was favoured with pretty good freedom in speaking both morning & Evening. Brought before them in the Morning another portion of the history of Joseph & his Brethren to which all listened with great attention & seeming interest.

O may the word of truth thoroughly convert them from the error of their ways into the way of truth.

In the afternoon met four Classes for Tickets and felt much interest in their experience.

Heard Mr. Creed make some excellent observations in the Evening on the subject of Christian holiness.

Sat: 20 – A week of labour and exercise to me. My mind is now under considerable exercise as to my providential path. Here are two vessels now loading in either of which I might move with my family to the Colony, but Mr. Bumby being away I cannot take any step. But the Lord ruleth & knoweth what is best for me & mine.

Sunday 21 – Addressed an attentive congregation this Morning from “Pharoah’s Dreams” &c in which the people seemed much interested – After which I went down to the Heads to visit Mrs. Woon in her serious indisposition of which we received intelligence last Evening but was truly thankful to find she was not so ill as we had feared.

[Page 169]

July – 1839

Sat: 27 – Have this week fully made up my mind to leave New Zealand for my new appointment (if my Successor returns from the south in time) in the Francis Spaight by way of Sydney as no vessel is likely to offer for Hobart Town direct for some time to come.

Have therefore been very busy making some preparation towards our removal. I feel it no trifling matter to prepare for sea with a family like mine – Twelve in number.

Sunday 28 – Preached to a good congregation of natives this Morning from “Rejoice evermore, Pray without ceasing, and in every thing give thanks”. Had good freedom and the people seemed deeply attentive.

Heard Mr. Creed in the afternoon in English. Preached again at five to the Natives from another part of “Joseph & his Brethren” – and afterwards preached in English from “Verily he took not on him the nature of Angels, but he took on him the seed of Abraham”, but was not favoured with that freedom with which I have often been blessed.

Our minds were greatly relieved from anxiety this Morning by the arrival of Messengers from the Southward bringing letters from our Brethren Bumby & Hobbs

informing us of their safe arrival at Kawia. All well.

August 3rd – Saturday – Have had another week of exercise & confusion in the way of preparing for our removal, in addition to which have been very low & poorly at times. My mind is not easy respecting our projected change. May the Lord prepare our way before us!

[Page 170]

August

Sunday, 4 – Our attendance today has been excellent. The Chapel could not contain the people. They listened with deep attention while I addressed them in the “Happiness of the Heavenly state from the last Chap: of Revelations – “And there shall be no more curse there &c”. In the afternoon we held a Lovefeast with our people. It was well attended and many spoke very well of the Lord’s dealings with them. I could not but remark the very pleasing change which has been effected in their manner &c &c since I came amongst them. We had nothing of that wildness & confusion so natural to them and which was painfully manifest at some of the first Lovefeasts after I arrived.

In the Evening I spoke in English with good freedom from “Likewise I say unto you there is joy in the presence of the Angels of God &c”. It was a profitable season to my own Soul. I could not but remark how wonderfully God had blessed the labours of us as a Body during the ~~last~~ Hundred years now past since Mr. Wesley commenced his Missionary Cause and what joy it must have occasioned in Heaven. Captain Tilly of the Earl Stanhope attended our services with two of his Passengers.

Sat: 10 – Blessed be God I am brought safely thro the anxieties & troubles of another week, but am still kept in suspense as to whether we shall go in the Spaight or not. My Successor and his compn. in travel have not yet returned, consequently I cannot move. O may the Lord graciously direct my steps aright, that I may not miss my providential path! May I be fully prepared for all the will of God, Amen & Amen!

[Page 171]

August 1839

Sunday 11 – Our Congregation were thin today, but very attentive both morning & Evening.

In the Afternoon I preached in English from Moses lifting up the Serpent in the Wilderness. There was good feeling & hope the Sermon would not be lost. Heard Mr. Ironside preach a useful sermon in the Evening from “Many sorrows shall be unto the wicked but unto him that trusteth in the Lord mercy shall compass him about”.

Sat: 17 – About one Oclock this Morning arrived our long expected Brethren Bumbly & Hobbs for whom we had begun to feel considerable anxiety. They have been away nearly fourteen weeks, and have had rough weather and various difficulties to contend with during their voyage & Tour but the Lord has been their support & comfort and upon the whole their Report is very favourable. They have decided upon Port Nicholson as the most eligible situation for a new station.

Have spent several hours with my Brethren this afternoon in consultation about our future movements. My mind has been much exercised as to my own path, but from all that my Brethren have said, I cannot but conclude that I ought to go, and shall therefore arrange to go in the Francis Spaight by way of Sydney.

Sunday, 18 – Heard Mr. Hobbs address the Natives this Morning with a considerable pleasure after which he gave them an account of their late expedition to the southward with which they appeared interested.

Mr. Bumby gave us an excellent Sermon in the afternoon on the gracious care of the Almighty towards his people from “As Eagle taketh her young &c &c”.

[Page 172]

In the Evening I had a most gracious season with the people, giving them my parting advise from “Only let your conversation be as becometh the Gospel of Christ &c”.

My own mind was much affected, and there was strong feeling in the hearts of most present. May the Lord bless them abundantly!

Spoke a few words to my Brethren &c in the Evening by their particular wish from “Wherefore my beloved Brethren be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding &c &c. It was a profitable season.

Sat: 24 – After four extremely busy days in preparing for our departure, we got on board the Spaight down at the Heads about six last Evening and between 7 & 8 this Morning we weighed anchor and about ten Oclock we crossed the Bar and got out to Sea with a favourable wind. I know not that I ever put to sea with my mind more calm & free from anxious care. Thanks be to God I have been enabled to wind up all my affairs connected with the Mission satisfactorily to my own mind, and I believe to the minds of all my Brethren – and it affords me great pleasure to know that I have left all both Europeans and Natives in the best of feelings – Having the Prayers and good wishes of all.

Had strong feelings for a few moments while crossing the Bar. Our Leads Marine sung out a quarter less three, and our vessel drew between sixteen & seventeen feet – and what added to our feeling was the cry that the Barque Elizabeth was aground. She had taken the Bar a few minutes before us, but that proved to be a mistake, as she was only making signal for us to keep more to the North.

[Page 173]

Sep: 1839

Monday, 9th – We have now been fifteen Days at sea much longer than we expected to have been at the commencement of our voyage. For several days after leaving Hokianga we made rapid progress, but since the winds have been very unfavourable and the weather exceedingly squally and unsettled. A favourable breeze is now wafting us towards our Port, and the land is appearing to our view. Yesterday we had four ships in sight, one of which we signalized and found her to be the Hero, but could not ascertain whether bound. This morning we spoke a Schooner Arial from Sydney for the Bay of Islands. Hitherto we have been very comfortable on Board. The Captain and all are very kind. Our health upon the whole has been very good and we have been enabled to have Morning & Evening worship daily in our own department and have in the same found it good to draw near unto God. Have had the Privilege of holding public service three times and on each occasion all listened with deep attention to the truths delivered. Blessed be my God forever for his continued goodness to me and mine! I feel my own mind drawn out in sincere desire after him, and with my future days to be more fully devoted to his glory. Gracious Lord guide thou thy Servant in the right way.

Wed: 11th – By the good Providence of our God we anchored safely in Sydney Cove this Morning, and was most cordially received by Bro: McKenny, who speedily

arranged for getting my family on Shore, and for the present we are to take up our abode with him at the Mission House until we ascertain where will be the scene of my future labours.

Here I found my old friend Bro: J. Orton who

[Page 174]

with his family are for the present remaining in Sydney. He with Bro: Watkin manifested strong brotherly affection, and all our old friends appeared glad to see us. Preached this Evening in Macquarie St. Chapel with good freedom from "For the Lord God is a Sun & Shield &c". The Congregation was pretty good and the attention & feeling excellent. Praise the Lord.

Sydney as a place is much enlarged and improved since we left. Many Emigrants have come out and some of these are excellent men in society with us.

Sunday, 15 – This Morning heard a young man Mr. Mills a Local Preacher who has just arrived from London – highly recommended. He preached a good Sermon from "Behold the Lamb of God who taketh away the Sin of the World". We had a good congregation in the afternoon in Prince Street, to whom I preached from "Wherefore he is able to save unto the uttermost &c", but was not free in Spirit. Preached with freedom in the Evening in Macquarie Street from "But Godliness is profitable unto all things having promise &c &c". We afterwards held a Prayer Meeting in the Vestry at which six Souls entered into Gospel liberty. Glory be to God! This we hope is the beginning of good days in Sydney.

Monday, 16 – A blessed Meeting this Evening. Chapel full to whom I spoke from "Blessed are they that mourn for they shall be comforted". At the Prayer Meeting that followed we had five or six souls who came forward as Penitents and for whom we wrestled & Prayed until God gave them to feel that though "He was angry with them his anger was now turned away and that he now comforted their souls". This was a most happy Meeting to my own Soul

[Page 175]

Sep: - 1839

and to the souls of many others. My eldest Daughter was amongst those who were enabled to believe with the heart unto righteousness" for which my soul greatly rejoices, and magnificent the name of the most high. O may she ever be kept safe in the cleft of the rock!

Tuesday, 17 – We had a most blessed Meeting last Evening at Prince Street Chapel. I addressed them from "Blessed are they that mourn for they shall be comforted" – After which we held a Prayer Meeting at which we had several Souls set at liberty and this Evening at Druit Street chapel we had an overflowing attendance and a most blessed unction rested upon us. Several professed to receive the "knowledge of salvation by the remission of their sins". Glory to God for those droppings from above! O may we have a glorious shower!

Thursday, 19th – A most interesting day. The opening of the new chapel at Parramatta and laying the Foundation Stone of another in the same place. At 11 A.M. the first service commenced by the Rev. J. McKenny who Chairman of the District who Preached a pleasing Sermon from "Thy Kingdom come". The attendance was good and the service altogether very interesting. The Chapel itself is a very commodious and elegant structure, an ornament to the Town, and a great credit

to all connected with its erection. Immediately after the close of the Service the congregation proceeded to the site where the other chapel is to be erected where we were met by Hannibal McArthur Esq., Member of Council, who after singing & Prayer gave a short but most appropriate address

[Page 176]

and then laid the Foundation Stone. Mr. D.C. Draper the resident Missionary delivered a most excellent address to the numbers who had assembled to witness the interesting scene.

It is supposed that such an event never before occurred in the whole history of Methodism of a ~~second~~ the Foundation of a second Chapel being laid on the same day that another was opened in the same Town. This speaks much for our rising cause in Parramatta.

In the Evening our excellent Bro: Missionary the Rev. J. Orton Preached a most excellent Sermon from "How goodly are thy tents of Jacob &c" and though long in the delivery the interest was well kept up. The singing was excellent and all together the services were truly pleasing.

Sunday, 22 – A delightful Sabbath at Parramatta. Preached at 11 A.M. to a good Congregation from "Likewise I say unto there is joy in Heaven over one sinner that repenteth". The feeling was good. In the afternoon stood on the Foundation Stone of the new Chapel over the water & Preached to a good & most attentive Congregation from "Neither is there salvation in any other &c".

As I knew there were many Catholics close by I was constrained to show that as there is "no other Name given under Heaven &c" – Then that it is worse than folly to cry "Hail Mary Mother of God hear us &c &c". In the Evening heard Bro: Watkin Preach to an overflowing Congregation from "For the Redemption of their Soul is Precious &c &c". The Sermon contained many good & strong things but his Delivery is against him.

Assisted my Brethren after sermon

[Page 177]

Sep: - 1839

in administering the Lord's Supper, which was a most affecting service. My Soul on this occasion felt something of the "overwhelming power of saving grace". One Soul publicly professed to have experienced the sanctifying grace of God.

Thus ended the long to be remembered opening of the new Chapel in Parramatta, New South Wales.

Sunday, 29 – By the request of Bro: McKenny I left Sydney on Friday Evening on board the Steamer "Sophia Jane" for Maitland on the Hunter River to spend the Sabbath with our few friends in this rapidly rising, and truly interesting place. Arrived at Maitland about noon yesterday, and was met with a most hearty welcome by Mr. Ledvan a warm hearted Irish Methodist, who has lately emigrated to this place, and being an acceptable Local Preacher, God has so blessed his labours that we have now a most promising cause in the Town of West Maitland. A new Chapel is erecting, and had they but a Missionary of the right stamp we should soon have a flourishing cause in this Town and Neighbourhood.

Preached at 11 A.M. to an interesting congregation from "Xt being able to save unto the uttermost". Gave Tickets to the Member at Three & Preached again to an excellent congregation at 7 P.M. from "Godliness is profitable to all things &c" and afterwards administered the Sacrament to the society & a few other pious individuals.

Mon: 30 – Returned home in the Steamer truly gratified by my visit, and thankful to my heavenly Father for the glorious prospect of good that is apparent in that place. With the District of the Hunter, I was much

[Page 178]

delighted and know not that in all my travels I have ever seen a more rich & beautiful Country.

Nov: 3rd, Sunday – Left Sydney this morning on board the “Lord Glenelg”, Cap: Smith, for Hobart Town and having a very favourable breeze we soon got out to Sea. We have as Ship Mates The Rev. Mr. Campbell of the Prysbyterian Church, wife and five Children, Mrs. Jefferson a widow Lady & a Miss Mackracken – All very agreeable persons. Soon after we got to Sea the day being very favourable, all hands were mustered and I Preached to them on the Quarter Deck from “As Moses lifted up the Serpent &c”. All were very attentive and I hope impressed.

Our stay in Sydney was prolonged far beyond what we expected but I trust it was for good. During the past I Preached to them many times with interest to myself and I hope profit to the people. Many expressed a wish that I might remain amongst them, but I was not sorry when the time of our departure arrived. Sydney I do not love as a place, yet believe I could have laboured profitably amongst the people there. Our worthy Missionary Mr. McKenny shewed us great kindness the seven weeks we were under his roof.

Monday, 10 – After a passage of nine days of very heavy weather we came to an anchor in Sullivan’s Cove this Evening about eight Oclock, for which I felt truly thankful to my Heavenly. I went on shore accompanied by the Captain and was truly happy to meet with our two Brethren Messrs. Waterhouse & Egglestone and the joy was reciprocal. From them I received the most hearty welcome and after an hour’s converse returned on board to my family.

[Page 179]

Nov: 1839

Teusday, 12 – Between ten and eleven this Morning got all my family on shore and up to our old quarters the Mission House in Melville Street, to which place many of our old friends came and gave us the most hearty welcome. Such a reception we never before met with in any place where we have laboured. O how truly kind and gracious has our heavenly Father been unto us Creatures so unworthy!

Wednesday, 13 – Busy today in getting most of my Luggage on shore &c. In the Evening we had a large congregation to whom I endeavoured to give a word of exhortation for I could not attempt to Preach. My mind was so much excited by seeing so many old friends and receiving so many warm congratulations that I knew not how to bear up under my feelings. Another circumstance that interested & affected me much was so many New Zealanders being present. About twenty were sitting before me and for whom I felt much interested. I addressed myself to them for a few minutes in their own tongue and to me they listened with fixed attention. This circumstance appeared to excite great interest with all present - This interesting Meeting with Mr. Waterhouse Praying in English and I in the New Zealand tongue

Sat: 27 – Thanks be to my heavenly Father for bringing me to the close of this eventful interesting week in health & Peace – and I bless his name. I never felt my

soul more fully desirous of glorifying him my Lord & Master in all I say and do.

[Page 180]

Sunday, 18th – Had an excellent congregation this Morning to whom I Preached with freedom from “For the Lord God is a sun & shield &c”. Good time.

In the afternoon I Preached to near thirty New Zealanders and the thing becoming known the Chapel was very full and the Service appeared to interest all.

In the Evening we had a very full chapel. I Preached with great plainness of speech from “Examine yourselves whether ye be in the faith”. Lady Franklin and Lieut. were present, also the Captain of the Man of War now lying in the Harbour, also two Military Officers. The New Zealanders being present I afterwards gave them a word of exhortation which appeared to excite great interest in the minds of most that were present. Oh that the services of this day may be followed with the special blessing of the great Head of the Church!

Sat: 24 – This has been another very exciting week to me. Have visited many old friends, all of whom have expressed great pleasure at our return.

On Wednesday Evening we held a Temperance Meeting in our Chapel, Dr. Turnbull in the Chair. The attendance was very good and there was some pretty good speaking. I addressed the New Zealanders more than twenty of whom were present on the subject.

On Thursday visited New Norfolk and Preached for Mr. Manton in the Evening. Enjoyed the company of my old friends very much and hope my visit will have proved profitable to others.

Several of my Children have been seriously indisposed this week with colds attended with much Fever, but the Lord is mercifully restoring them to health.

[Page 181]

Nov: 1839

Sunday 25 – Heard the General Superintendent Mr. Waterhouse this Morning from “I have set watchmen upon thy walls O Jerusalem who shall never hold their peace &c”, and a more judicious Sermon I never heard. His style of Preaching is calculated to do much good.

In the Afternoon I Preached at the Bethel Chapel, a Building erected for the Sailors and had the place crowded. I gave them a very plain Sermon from “As Moses lifted up the Serpent in the wilderness”, and in the Evening in Melville Street Chapel from “But Godliness is profitable unto all things &c”. This has been a profitable day to my own Soul.

Wed: 28 – Had the pleasing intelligence this Morning that Mrs. Manton has presented her husband with a Daughter, and that their only son whom they were expecting to lose by Death was much better.

Mrs. Egglestone the wife of my Colleague has also presented her husband this morning with a little Daughter in consequence of which I shall have to leave home in the Morning to supply his place on the other side of the Island.

Preached this Evening from “Jabez’s Prayer” and then spent two hours with the leading man amongst the Radicals who separated from us here about years ago, but I fear my efforts to get them back amongst us will be vain.

Sat: 30 – Left home on Thursday noon & arrived here at Launceston this Evening, sufficiently tired having ridden about 60 miles today, but the pleasure with which I was received satisfied me abundantly for the fatigue of the Journey. Found all the

friends in health and most of them prospering in their Souls.

[Page 182]

December

Sunday 1 – Had a good congregation this Morning and was favoured with good freedom in speaking from “Comfort ye, comfort ye my people saith your God”. The people were all Eye & Ear and many appeared to feel.

Met Mr. Pherguson’s Class for Tickets in the afternoon. We had a feeling time, afterwards heard part of a Sermon from Leutt. Ball who is himself a monument of Mercy and bids fair to be useful to others.

Chapel well attended again in the Evening and I endeavoured to be very faithful in my Preaching to them from “Examine yourselves whether ye be in the faith” - Afterwards the Lord’s Supper to the Society. It was a most delightful season. Was well tired in my mental frame ere we had closed.

Monday, 2 – Spent the Morning in visiting the various friends with whom I had been acquainted. They rejoiced to see me, and we wept & prayed together. Afternoon met Mrs. Sherwin’s Class for Tickets. The Lord was present with us indeed comforting our hearts.

In the Evening attended the Public Prayer Meeting when I gave them a brief account of what the Lord is doing amongst & for the poor New Zealanders. Many were greatly affected & my own heart was softened.

Teusday, 3 – Accompanied Messrs. Oakden, Reed & Sherwin to Westbury to lay the Foundation Stone of a new Wesleyan Chapel in that place. Rode with Mr. Reed in his gig, and had much interesting conversation with him by the way. He is a wonderful trophy of saving Mercy, and flames with loving Zeal for the Souls of others. His heart is set upon the work of the Ministry. Met Bro: Warren at Westbury, and we had an interesting time while together there laying the Foundation Stone &c &c. He is a promising young Man and is proceeding to New Zealand. Returned together to Launceston.

[Page 183]

Decr. 1839

Wed: 4 – Spent the Day amongst the friends and Preached in the Evening to a full Chapel from “Godliness is profitable unto all things &c” but found it hard work to get on, having a bad cold and otherwise indisposed.

Thursday, 5 – Left Launceston at five this Morning for Avoca, St. Pauls Plains distant near 50 miles, but our excellent friend Mr. Gleadon brought me Twenty-five Miles on my way in his Pheaton which eased my Journey much. Arrived there about three Oclock, and found Bro: Butters had arrived before me. We proceeded to visit Major & Mrs. Grey, who have just lost their eldest Son by Drowning. Although all but a perfect stranger except by Name, I was well received and found the minds of the Parents supported far better than could have been expected. I trust they both enjoy the saving mercy of our God.

It is very remarkable that at St. Pauls Plains there are three families (Relatives) of the Greys and each have within a very short period lost their eldest Son, two by Drowning, and the other by a horse running away with him and literally dashing out his Brains by coming in contact with the bough of a Tree.

We had a good congregation for the place assembled in the Court House to whom I

Preached from "I must work the works of him that sent me &c".

Was most comfortably entertained at the House of Mr. Simon Lord, in whose heart and also that of his wife the Lord has wrought a very gracious change through the labours of Mr. Butters. Much good has evidently accrued from his labours in this place; but unhappily much evil has also arisen from the conduct

[Page 184]

of a Man who had been appointed [indecipherable], he has yielded to Temptation and done great evil.

Friday 6 – Had a pretty good congregation again in the Court House at Nine this Morning to whom I Preached with freedom from "Turn ye to the strong hold ye Prisoners of hope". Afterwards rode to Campbell Town and Preached to about Thirty people from "I must work the works of him that sent me &c" and then rode on about 12 Miles, by which time I was well tired and prepared for rest.

Sunday, 8 – Rested yesterday at Cap: Horton's where I met three young men whom the Lord has converted in this Neighbourhood and is raising up as Exhorters &c in the good work. Attended their little Prayer Meeting at six O'clock this Morning. Preached in their new chapel at Ross at half past nine with good freedom from "Prisoners of hope" – Then rode to Oatlands about Twenty Miles and Preached at three & six in the Court house to good Congregations from "Godliness" and "Prisoners of hope". Afterwards met the little Class that has lately been formed in their place. Here we have a prospect of considerable good and shall soon have a New Chapel commenced. Spent the Night at Mr. Salmons, the District Constable, whose good wife has become truly Pious.

Monday, 9 – Left Oatlands about seven this Morning and rode down to Mr. Johnson's at the Green Ponds. Collected his People at noon and addressed them from the First Psalm and then rode home where I was thankful to find my family in fully good health & Peace. Praise God for Journeying Mercies.

[Page 185]

Decr. 1839

Wed: 11 – Have spent these two days in visiting the people. Our dear Sister Barnett is very ill not likely to continue with us very long, but all is [indecipherable]. Preached this Evening from "Salvation is of the Lord, thy blessing is upon thy people". Good time.

Sunday, 15 – Preached at North West Bay this Morning in a Barn belonging to Mr. Nathl. Lewas to about fifty people. They heard with great attention when I addressed them from "Moses lifting up the Serpent". In the afternoon & Evening at Brown's River and was favoured with good freedom and there was strong feeling produced. Here we have a neat little Chapel, and a very promising cause for such a scattered Place. Was comfortably entertained at the House of Mr. Firth, several of whose family have become converted & united [indecipherable].

Sunday, 22 – The day appointed for our Missionary Sermon. I Preached in the Morning at Davy Street from "Ask of me & I will give thee the Heathen for thine inheritance &c". Had hard work – attendance pretty good. In the afternoon according to appointment I addressed about twenty New Zealanders in their own tongue in Melville Street Chapel in the presence of a numerous white

audience. Great interest was excited. Found it a profitable season. In the Evening rode out to O'Brien's Bridge and had a most profitable time while Preaching to the Chapel full of people from "Examine yourselves whether ye be in the faith". I have not witnessed a Congregation more rivetted for many a day. May the Lord follow the same with his blessings. Mr. Manton Preached at Melville Street in the Morning and Mr. Waterhouse in the Evening – Mr. Egglestone New Norfolk.

[Page 186]

Monday, 23 – Felt my mind very much drawn out today in behalf of the New Zealand Mission, and resolved to attempt to raise a Fund in order to send two additional Missionaries amongst them to prevent the introduction of Catholicism in places where I know they will go unless there be more Missionaries and thank the Lord I have succeeded in collecting £70 from a few wealthy friends.

According to arrangement our Missy. Meeting was held this Evening, Sir Joshua Franklin kindly presided. The Meeting was very well attended and the interest excited was very good and well sustained all through the Meeting. The account of what the Lord is doing by us in New Zealand seemed to make deep impression upon the Meeting. My mind was greatly excited during the Meeting but I felt considerable embarrassment while delivering my Narrative of the work in New Zealand.

The Collections amounted to more than £50 a greater sum than expected.

Sunday 29 – Preached at the River [indecipherable] this morning from "And they went forth & Preached every where, the Lord working with them &c". The cong. was not large, but deeply attentive.

In the Afternoon Preached at the Back River (New Norfolk) to nearly a Hundred people in their neat little new Chapel from "Moses lifted up the Serpent in the wilderness" – very attentive congregation. The Congregation at New Norfolk in the Evening was not very good, nor was I at liberty while addressing the same. Yet they seemed impressed from my remarks upon "I must work the works of him that sent me while it is day". This has been rather a barren day to my own soul.

[Page 187]

Decr. 1839

Tuesday 31 – According to our usage we held our Watchnight, the services of which commenced at half past nine when I Preached from the parable of the "Ten Virgins" which appeared to produce solemn impression on the minds of the Congregation but I was not free in Spirit or in Speech. Afterward I had closed Mr. Egglestone gave a most appropriate and powerful address and after Mr. Waterhouse spoke to us in a very suitable manner, and closed the Meeting in the usual solemn silent manner while the old year closed & and new one was ushered in. My heart was somewhat affected and I laboured to consecrate myself afresh to God. I was pleased to see several respectable friends thus joining with us who are not united to us.

Thus am I brought to the close of another year, a year of various trial and exercise to me and mine but one in which the Lord hath greatly magnified his mercy towards.

Through many dangers, snares and Deaths his hand unseen has safely led us. What cause for abounding quietude to my Heavenly Father for mercies so numerous, so undeserved! And what cause for deep humiliation of soul before my God for my base ingratitude, my great unfaithfulness. Oh how often have I in diffecion wandered from him, though by his mercy I have been kept from wickedly departing from his ways.

Lord help me that my spared life may more fully shew forth thy praise! And may I at the last be found of thee in Peace, without spot and blameless. Amen and Amen.

[Page 188]

Journal for 1840. Nathl. Turner

January 4th – This morning arrived from New Zealand our excellent Brother Bumby. He has come over on business and by him I have received Letters from the Brethren there and from many of the natives who write in a very affecting strain for me to return amongst them. Blessed be God that Mission continues to prosper. This Evening we followed to Grave the Remains of our excellent Friend & Sister in the Lord Mrs. John Barrett – a woman greatly beloved by all who knew her and whose loss will be greatly felt by many, especially by her family. A more useful member was not to be found in our Society or in this Colony, but she was gone to her reward. She is the first interred in the Ground now appropriated for a Methodist Burial ground in this Town. The Funeral was numerously attended, but the night was exceedingly wet and uncomfortable.

Sunday, 5 – Preached this Morning from “Beloved I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth” – was not free. In the afternoon read the form of Covenant and afterwards assisted by Mr. Bumby administered the Sacrament to the Society – a very solemn time! Heard Mr. Bumby in the Evening from “Watchman, watchman, what of the Night &c” – from which he Preached an excellent Sermon to a very large and attentive congregation – after which we had a very good Prayer Meeting in the Upper School Room.

Sat: 11 – Have spent an agreeable week with our good Bro: Bumby in visiting various friends but I seldom find this the most profitable way in spending time. O for a closer walk with God! “Lord draw me that I may run after thee!”

[Page 189]

January 1840

Sunday, 12 – Preached at OBrien’s Bridge this Morning & Evening & Roseneath in the afternoon. Have not been favoured with softening influences which are generally my Portion in Preaching, but felt impressed & quickened at the Covenant & Sacrament with the Society this Evening. O for power from on high!

13 – Between Thirty & Forty friends went down to Browns River today – the Anniversary of the opening of their little Chapel. The Service was to have commenced at 11 A.M. but the wind being against us we did not arrive there with our little vessel until after two. We found many waiting for us. Mr. Bumby Preached an excellent Sermon from “He that winneth souls is wise”. Collected better than £7 – good for the place. The wind being light did not get up again before ten, but upon the whole had an interesting day.

15 – Bro: Bumby left us this Morning for his station New Zealand by way of Sydney. The Lord go with him!
At noon today left home for Launceston to attend their Missionary Meetings on that side the Island.

Sat: 25 – Returned home in safety last Evening and found my family all well. Thanks be to God. Have attended three Missionary Meetings at Ross, Launceston & Longford or Norfolk Plains. They were all interesting Meetings, the two former

especially. There was great interest excited by a relation of various facts shewing the Power of the Gospel which had come under my own observation when in New Zealand. After the ~~collections~~ Services at Launceston on the Sabbath and Monday Evening we collected Two Hundred Pounds – Thanks be to God for the change he has wrought in that place and the disposition he has given to some of our leading men there to support the cause & extend its influence in every way they can.

[Page 190]

Sunday 26 – This has been a day of light and liberty to my own feelings. Have seldom felt more free than this Morning while Preaching on the “Cananitish woman” and I hope the congregation was profited. Was pretty much at home again in the Evening from “Look unto me and be ye saved all ye ends of the Earth, for I am God and there is none else”, after which we had a good Prayer Meeting, but alas! as yet we have no conversions. May my soul be restless for this! Lord save souls!

February 1st – This has been a good week to me. Have felt the presence of my Master with me while visiting the poor of our People from house to house. O this is blessed work! an important part of the Christian Pastor’s duty. Preached at Davy St. on Teusday Evening & the Bridge on Thursday Evening on both occasions from “But it is good for me to draw near to God” – and so I felt it. Blessed be God. This Evening recommenced our Public Bands, which during my absence have not been attended to – and we have had a soul encouraging time. Praise God!

Sunday, 2nd – Seldom have I been favoured with a better Sabbath to my own feelings than this. At our early Prayer Meeting we had a most gracious season. My own heart was melted before the Lord. Read the Liturgy, the Litany especially with great pleasure and Profit. Chapel well filled. Preached from Prov: 15 – 24. Congregation very attentive. Preached at the Bethel in the afternoon from “Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do &c”. Good time!

A full Chapel again in the Evening. My subject was “Our Lord’s agony in the Garden”. All appeared to feel that God was there – Sacrament – Truly it was good to draw near! My Soul was ready to be overwhelmed! The feeble Body grew weary.

[Page 191]

February 1840

Sat: 8th – Have not been so healthy & vigorous this week as usual, but have been enabled to attend to my various duties – Long to see our Zion in good prosperity – O when shall the Spirit be poured out! Blessed be God we had some drops this Evening at our public Band Meeting. O may we soon have a glorious shower!

Sunday, 9 – At Davy Street all day. Morning & Evening in the chapel, and out of Doors in the afternoon. In the Chapel the Congregations were slack, but out of Doors we had about One Hundred & fifty. This is at present a barren place, but if the Lord pour out his Spirit we shall see better days. Revive thy work!

Returned home before the service was closed in Melville Street & was glad to find the Chapel all but overflowing. Assisted them in their after Prayer Meeting, and we had something of a reviving feeling. Glory be to God!

Sunday, 16 – A blessed unction rested upon us in all our Meetings today. Was favoured with pretty good freedom in Preaching both Morning & Evening in Melville Street. The Congregations were excellent, and deeply attentive while I Preached from “Wherefore he also is able to save them to the uttermost &c” and “Turn ye to the

strong hold ye Prisoners of hope &c". The Prayer Meeting afterwards was all but overflowing, and some appeared to be "heavy laden". O that the Spirit may be poured out from on high upon us!

Sat: 28 – Have had much exercise of mind this week. Bro: Longbottom's health having failed at Adelaide he has come here to get it recruited, and our General Superintendant has determined that my Excellent Colleague Mr. Egglestone shall go there in his place. I feel this change much fearing it will tend to the injury of our cause in the Circuit. Should not Bro: L's health rally I shall have a heavy burden to sustain. But the Lord is all sufficient. May I trust!
Have been encouraged this week in finding that my

[Page 192]

March

my efforts to bring back the friends that broke off from us full two years ago are likely to succeed with many of them. Several of them have fully made up their minds to return – and my efforts to get them back meet with the approval of our friends in general.

Sunday, 23 – My labor today has been Preaching twice at OBrien's Bridge & once at Roseneath – at the former place the attendance was good and the services interesting, but the latter is most discouraging.

March 1st – Sunday – North West Bay this Morning (a new place) where I had a very attentive little Congregation in Mr. Lucas' Barn and to whom I found it profitable to Preach from "Lord remember me when thou comest into thy Kingdom &c", Luke 23. Had the Chapel at Brown's River quite full in the afternoon to whom I attempted to improve the Death of Mr. Baynton's child from Job 33 – 29, 30 – "Lo all these things worketh God after times with man, to bring back his soul from the Pit, to be enlightened with the light of the living". Preached again in the Evening from the "Cananitish Woman" and was favoured with gracious freedom of soul, but the Congregation was small.

Monday, 2nd – Visited most of the Settlers at North West Bay to obtain subscriptions towards erecting a little Chapel in that place. Mr. Lucas has kindly given us an acre of land and several have promised Cash & labour according to their means. Returned home & found all well save our poor New Zealand Girl, who is fast hastening to another world.

Sat: 7 – Early on Thursday Morning Bro: Egglestone, wife & Child left us for Port Adelaide. About nine the same morning died Susanna Parchuria our New Zealand Girl, and yesterday Morning we committed her remains to the Grave in our New Burial ground.

[Page 193]

I trust that through the blood of atonement her Spirit has found its way to a better world, although the state of experience was not what we could have wished. Have twice visited the Hospital this week where many are sick and nigh unto Death. O to be ready!

I have this week accomplished what I hope will prove of great importance to our cause here, viz, the purchase of the Chapel &c from the associated friends, several of whom have resolved to come back among us. Their concern is now broken up for

which I thank God, because I considered it likely to be productive of much evil.

Sunday, 8th – At Eleven I Preached at our new Chapel in High Street which has just fallen into our hands from the Association. The attendance was pretty good including the Children. I addressed them from Luke 20 – 35.36 – and found it good to be there. After service several expressed themselves as thankful that they had been brought to see me in that Pulpit. O that this event may be overruled for the good of many!

In the afternoon I had a good Congregation at the Bethel and addressed them with tolerable freedom from Psalm 4, “There be many who say who will shew us any good &c”. Our Chapel at Melville Street was well attended in the Evening, and I spoke plain important truths to them from Job 33 – “Lo all these things worketh God often times with men, to bring back his soul from the Pit &c”. This Sermon I hope will have its effect upon some. I afterwards met the Society, and never felt myself more at home while so engaged. Lord water thine inheritance.

Sat: 14 – This has been to me a profitable week. Have felt my soul in my work – visiting the people – attending the sick & Dying in the Hospital – giving Tickets to some of the Classes and in my Study preparing for the Pulpit. Blessed be God for the health of Body & Peace & energy of mind I am given to enjoy!

[Page 194]

Sunday, 15th – I commenced this day at our 7 O'clock Prayer Meeting and found it good to be there. The attendance good. At 11 met Bro: Wellard's Class for Tickets – Profitable time.

Preached at 11 – Melville Street from Luke XX 35,36 – but was much shut up. Had no freedom of speech at all. At three met Bro: Brown's Class for Tickets and had a most interesting season with them. This is a good class.

In the Evening Preached at High Street Chapel and seldom felt more at home. My subject was “Barnabas seeing the grace of God at Antioch”. It was judged there might be nearly 150 present and they were all Eye and all Ear. I trust this Sermon will be foll'ed with good to many.

Sunday, 22 – Had a good time this Morning in Melville Street from “Lord remember me when thou comest into thy Kingdom”. The attendance & attention was very good, and I hope the word Preached would not lose its effect.

Afternoon addressed the Sunday School Children and in the Evening Preached at Davy Street with good freedom from the “Cananitish Woman”. There was strong feeling, but the attendance was not very good. O when shall we see the Spirit poured out from on high & sinners converted to God! Lord hear thou thy people's cry.

Sat: 28 – Have been very poorly most of this week but have nevertheless endeavoured to bear up, and not only do my own work, but part of my Colleagues also, he being very unwell. The weather has been very cold & uncomfortable and various domestic affairs have been of a very trying nature, but I bless God they have passed away, and tonight at our Fellowship meeting I felt greatly quickened & comforted.

Sunday 29 – Had large congregations at Melville Street Morning & Evening and pretty good attendance at the Bethel in the afternoon, but I had not so great liberty as I frequently have throughout the day. Still I hope the word did not fall powerless upon them that heard.

[Page 195]

April 1840

Sunday, 5th – Rode to North West Bay this Morning and found a very interesting little Congn. who listened with great attention and apparent interest to the Parable of the “Prodigal Son” and my own soul found it good thus to exhibit the mercy of God to them.

In the afternoon at Brown’s River we had a good and attentive congregation to whom I Preached with freedom from “Barnabas seeing the grace of God at Antioch”. In the Evening to the same people I Preached again from “But they that are accounted worthy to obtain that world &c”. Found it good. Administered the Sacrament to the Society here for the first time I suppose since Creation’s work began.

Teusday 7th – Spent yesterday in visiting the people at N.W. Bay & Brown’s River and Preached at the latter place in the Evening from “As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him”. The word appeared to be with power to the people. Returned home this Morning about two hours after which we hailed with exceed delight the arrival of the Triton with her noble Missionary Band of Nine Brethren and Six Sisters all in health save Mrs. Skevington. We soon got them all on Shore and distributed to their temporary homes according to previous arrangements. Messrs. Turton & Williams with their wives are with us, the former for New Zealand, the latter for Fiji. They appear two excellent couples well adapted for their work – and all the others so far as I have seen are very suitable men and women with one exception.

Thursday 23 – Have had so many engagements in the arrival of our friends by the Triton that I have not had an opportunity of making my entries in my journal. We have had many interesting exciting seasons while they have been here - One Missionary Meeting at New Norfolk and another at OBrien’s Bridge -Two Public Tea Meetings in the Body of our new Chapel attended by upwards of three Hundred the first time

[Page 196]

and at the latter supposed to be near five Hundred. The former Meeting was held on account of the arrival of the Triton with so many Missionaries &c, and the latter was the Anniversary of our Sabbath Schools. Many excellent Speeches were delivered, and great interest was excited amongst our people and friends. Many friends embarked with them to see them away this afternoon – and the parting scene was very affecting especially between our excellent Genl. Supt. Mr. Waterhouse and his wife and Children. May the God of the Seas go with them & have them in his Holy Keeping! What hath God wrought in these seas since I arrived nearly Eighteen years ago! O Jesus ride on !!

Sunday, 26 – A barren, heavy day to me. Felt as though I had no power to Preach at all, especially in the Morning, and the Devil endeavoured to harass my mind not a little in consequence. But I endeavoured to be faithful & clear my soul of the people. After Evening service I read the excellent address of the last Conference to the Society, which was listened to with attention and I hope with profit.

May 2 – Saturday – Bless the Lord for bringing me to the close of another week in health and Peace. I have had some conflicts & Trials and painful exercises during the week, but they have passed away and tonight I have had a refreshing season at our Fellowship Meeting. O for more of the mind that was in Christ!

Sunday, 3rd – Early this morning recd. a communication from my Colleague informing me that he was too ill to Preach, so that I was obliged to take Melville Street again Morning & Evening without any previous arrangement, but was graciously favoured with liberty in my work. O what delightful work to Preach where the Lord is present! Solemn & profitable season at the Table of the Lord.

[Page 197]

June 1840

Sat: 6 – Since the last entry in my Journal I have been the subject of much exercise and conflict. My Colleague has continued in a very delicate state of health, so that most of the work of the Circuit has devolved upon myself. Several in the Church have been acting in a most disgraceful manner which has caused me much grief of mind. The Lord has been pleased also greatly to lay his hand upon several of my children, but they are now improving. Notwithstanding all my exercises & griefs I have more than ten thousand mercies for which to praise my God. O Lord give me a truly grateful heart!

Sunday 7 – This has been a heavy but profitable Sabbath to me. Preached at Melville Street Morning & Evening and at the Bethel in the afternoon. The congregations were good and deeply attentive. We had a solemn & profitable season in the Evening at the Lord's Supper. Was greatly wearied when done.

Sunday 14 – O'Brien's Bridge & Roseneath today but was not so much encouraged & happy in my work as on former occasions. The Congregations were comparatively thin.

August 14 – More than a month has elapsed since the last entry into my Journal. During this period I have had much to exercise my faith and patience, but much more to call forth renewed expressions of gratitude, love, and Praise to my heavenly Father. My hands have been ready to hang down through the unfaithful & wicked conduct of some of our Members. The continued ill health of my Colleague has been another source of grief to my heart. His not being able to labour has caused me an excess of labour, and has I fear a damping influence upon our cause. It is this that causes my

[Page 198]

August 1840

heart to mourn. We have at times appeared just on the eve of a revival amongst the people, and then something has transpired that has appeared to put an extinguisher upon the gracious flame.

My health until within the last few days has been very good, so that I have been strong to labour, nor have I been without tokens of heavens approving smile. Blessed be my God he has drawn out my soul in strong desire after himself and the Salvation of Souls. I am now the Prisoner of the Lord he having gently laid his afflicting hand upon me. O that it may lead me nearer to himself and fit me for greater usefulness in his cause!

Sunday, 16th – At twenty minutes before seven this Morning Mrs. Turner was safely

delivered of a fine little girl. After several hours considerable suffering the Lord was merciful to her and gave her strength in the hour of need. She is likely to do well and also the Child. How important the charge committed to my trust, six Daughters and Five sons to train up for Eternity. Two [indecipherable] have already gone before us to the Skies. O that we may be found at last a Family complete in Heaven, not one wanting!

Thursday, 20 – My mind has this day been greatly afflicted by the melancholy intelligence of the Death of our dear Brother Bumby by Drowning in New Zealand. No particulars have arrived save “That he and twelve Natives were Drowned while on an Expedition to the South”. I would fain hope it may be a false report but fear it is true seeing it is Published in the New Zealand Gazette from the Bay of Islands.

[Page 199

August 1840

O how painfully mysterious this event if true! How afflictive to the Church, and how distressing to his friends. A fine young man I scarcely ever saw, as ever heard a better Preacher – a polished Shaft in the Lord’s quiver – a workman needing not to be ashamed – Highly gifted, and deeply devoted to God and his cause. Alas! his Missionary cause has been short, but he is gone to shine more bright in another. He [indecipherable] “in that bright world above”. Perhaps the Lord had in mercy taken him from the “Evil to come”. But “that day” will declare the why & wherefore. O that I may be stirred up to pray and watch and weep that “I may be found of him in Peace without Spot and blameless”! Lord help me! Why Lord have I been thus long spared while thy more highly gifted servants have been cut down?

Sat: 22 – Thank the Lord the close of another week finds me in an improved state of health and I hope with my mind more deeply impressed with the importance of living fully to my God. My mind is much distressed with the reported Death of dear Brother Bumby. Lord what is Man!

My dear wife and Babe are doing well for which I thank thee thou preserver of Men.

Sunday 23 – Had a good Congregation this Morning and felt my own heart well affected while I addressed them from “I will therefore that Men Pray every where lifting up holy hands without wrath and doubting”. In the afternoon I was favoured with tolerable liberty at the Bethel Chapel from “The wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life &c”. Our chapel at Melville Street was well filled in the Evening and solemnity rested upon every countenance while I addressed them from “All the days of my appointed time will I wait until my change come”.

[Page 200]

Sunday 30 – Exchanged labour with Bro: Manton and Preached to-day twice in New Norfolk and once at the Back River. The congregations on each occasion were good, and I was favoured with good freedom.

The people here listen with devout attention, but alas the conversions amongst them are few indeed.

Returned home on Monday Morning in the Steamer and enjoyed the trip very much.

Wed: Sep: 2nd – About noon today arrived the Missy. ship Triton bringing back our Excellent Supt. Mr. Waterhouse in health. Mr. & Mrs. Brooks with their two Children have come in her from Vavau. The health of Bro: Brooks had begun seriously to fail.

Bro: Cargill from Feejee has also come in her with his four Daughters – he having been bereaved of his excellent wife about three months ago and it was deemed improper for him to remain in a land like that with his Motherless Children. They have likewise brought the painful intelligence of the Death of Mrs. Wilson, wife of the Revd. Mr. Wilson on their way to Vavau in the Triton. Her Body was committed to the deep “until the Sea gives up her Dead”. O what bereaving dispensations are these! Truly! “God moves in a mysterious way”. May my soul lie prostrate and adore! What am I that I should have been so long spared! Heard Bro: Cargill this Evening Preach a good Sermon from “In that day O Lord I will praise thee &c”. He is a Man of superior talent.

Sat: 5th – Have spent these three days with the friends who have arrived by the Triton assisting them in getting out their luggage &c. For poor Cargill with his Motherless Daughters I feel much. They are with us at present. What he will do I know not. Their arrival will I expect make great changes among us.

[Page 201]

September 1840

Sunday 6 – Preached at North West Bay this Morning to a few attentive hearers from Gen: 22 – “Abraham’s offering up his son Isaac” – wonderful subject! “O for a faith like his that I the bright example may pursue!”. In the afternoon from “The character and end of Enoch” – a most interesting subject. O why am I so far behind these holy men of old! Rode home and heard Mr. Waterhouse in the Evening in Melville Street give an account of his visit to New Zealand, Vavau & Feejee. The statement was very interesting; but some things would have been better said on another occasion. God is doing a great work in the Isles of the Sea – and I feel thankful that I have been employed in the feeblest way in two of those interesting Missions.

Sat: 12 – O God thro thy abounding mercy I am spared to see the close of another week – a week of mercy, yet a week of Trial. Heard Mr. Brooks on Wednesday Evening from “But it is good for me to draw near to God”. He is a good Preacher, but there is too good a disposition at display. That is bad in the Pulpit. Lord keep me low at thy feet!. Received a Letter yesterday from a Native in New Zealand confirming the afflictive news of Mr. Bumby’s Death. He and fifteen Natives (according to the statement sent to me) were drowned by the upsetting of a Canoe while crossing the Frith of the Thames River in New Zealand. Six of these Natives were the choicest of our Xtn. Natives from Mangungau. O how distressing the event! How Mysterious! But thou O Lord art righteous, and canst not err. O may I hear thy voice in this and be ever ready!

Sunday: 13 – Louisa Elizabeth was Baptized by the Rev. John Waterhouse.

[Page 202]

Sunday 30th Preached at the Independent Chapel this morning from ‘Rejoice ever more prey within and in everything give thanks for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning [indecipherable]’- The Chapel was miserably thin, and I was far from being at liberty while addressing them” – My soul felt very barren. Met two clapes for Tickets, and heard Mr Waterhouse in the evening improve the Death of the Rev J.H. Bumby from “Clouds & darkness are round about him, justice

and judgment are the habitation of his Hname' It was a great discourse and was listened to with great attention by a Crowded Congregation. Of Mr Bumby he said many excellent things-. He was doubtless a man of great worth. His Talents were of the first order and his zeal and usefulness on the Church of Christ were great. But the Lord had taken him unto himself.

Sunday 27- Spent this day with pleasure amongst the simple hearted people of North West Bay & brownie River. Preached in Mr Lucas' barn at the former place in the morning from the "Rich Man & Lazarus" and at the latter afternoon & evening from Heb 4-13 and Rev 7-13- and was favoured with freedom of soul and speech. May the blessing of Heaven follow the word Preached!

October 4-Sunday- My work has been today at [indecipherable]bridge & Roseneath but have not had as good congregation as on some former occasions. It is a subject of deep regret to me that we have not more of the Spirit and Power of the Gospel felt among our people and in our Congregation.

The people sit and listen with attentive and apparent pleasure and yet but few become converted to God and cast in their lot with us.

[page203]

October 1840

Sunday 11 Heard Mr Waterhouse this morning preach a most excellent Sermon from "Examine yourselves whether ye be in the faith"

In the Evening I preached from "prisoners of hope" But seldom have I felt more bound in spirit and in Speech than on this occasion. The Congregation was good and deply attentive.

Thursday 15 The Brethren assembled according to appointment we commenced our District Meeting this Morning at 9 o'clock our Genl' Supt. Mr Waterhouse being present took the Chair. The subject of appointments formed a principal part of this days business and the result in my own case meets my views & wishes I go to Launceston & Mr Brooks to Longford as my Colleague-.then the great heart of the church prepares my way and go along with me!

One of the Brethren Mr----- was found to have [indecipherable] and to the temptation of----- and had to seriously admonished from the Chair and from that and other unfavourable circumstances connected with his domestic affairs it was judged necessary to remove him to the New South Wales District. This was a very painful case and affected the whole of us very much. "Let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall"

Sat 19 Have got through the heaviest part of our District business in the greatest harmony, and I trust with an eye to the divine glory, on every subject we have been eye to eye.

Tomorrow it is intended to open the new Chapel but as the rain has been descending heavily all day, our friends fear it will affect the Congn.

O that the Cloud of the divine presence may rest on me.

[page 24]

Sunday 18 Morning more favourable than was feared. At Eleven the opening services commenced by the Rev.J.Waterhouse who after reading Prayers Preached from "I beseech thee O Lord send us now Prosperity". It was a good plain useful Sermon and listened to by a very excellent congregation.

The Rev. B.Hurst from Port Phillip Preached in the afternoon from" They that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength" a very plain pointed sermon calculated to be useful Congregation pretty good.

The Congregation in the Evening was excellent. The Governor & Lady, Colonial

Secretary were present. The service was conducted by the Rev. David Cargill A.M. lately from Fiji [Frejie] –He preached a most admirable Sermon from a part of “Solomons Prayer” “Will God indeed dwell upon the Earth”-. There were some fine bursts of eloquence, and some most powerful appeals.

The attendance upon the whole was far better than most of our friends had anticipated, but the ~~Congregation~~ Collections were not what they ought to have been considering the number and respectability of the hearers.

Monday 19- Attending to District business through the day, and this Evening had a most interesting service conducted by a native of the Friendly Islands & another from Frejie Islands Interpreted by the Rev. D.Cargill.

The interest excited in the Congregation appeared very great- the Frejeian read from the text in his own tongue “Come unto me all that labour and are heavy laden and I will give you rest” he appeared to feel his subject much.

Tuesday 20th Finished our District business this morning and separated in Peace and Love and I trust with a renewed determination to devote ourselves afresh to our work.

Tho. Simpson Preached an admirable Sermon in the Evening from “And mine eyes and mine heart shall be there perpetually”

May these opening Services be followed by the abundant blessing of God.

[Page 205]

November 1840

Sat. 14 The last three have been weeks of anxiety, trial, and care in winding up my District & Circuit affairs and in preparing for my removal to my new Circuit. Blessed be God I have been favoured with Health of body and strength of mind for my work. Many of the friends have manifested very kind feelings towards us, and some feel much at our removal.

Sunday 15 Preached this morning at the Bridge with great freedom “Exhorting them all part with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord” In the Evening Preached in Melville Street from “who when he came and had seen the grace of God [indecipherable] but was far from being at liberty owing that God of all grace and consolation pour out his blessing in rich abundance upon this people. I leave them all in love and only regret that I have not been more useful amongst them but I have done my best.

Sat: 21 - About noon on Monday last we bade Hobart Town and our kind friends there Farewell, leaving two of our boys Thomas & Nathaniel behind us - the former in the Commercial Bank the other at the Rev K.Campbells School. On our arrival at Bridgehead we found our kind friend Mr Johnson with his carriage waiting for us. We arrived safely at his house at the Green Ponds by Sun down and remained under his hospitable roof until Wednesday Morning, when we left in his carriage & my Gig for Saml. Horton’s Esq. at Ross. Mr. Spooke kindly offered to drive Mrs. Turner & children in Mr. Johnson’s Carriage, where we arrived about nine Oclock very weary with the journey, but the hearty welcome with which we were received by Mrs. Horton made ample amends for the fatigue of the Journey – were sorry to find the Captain very poorly in Bed.

Thursday, attended the Missy. Meeting at Ross and was

[Page 206]

highly delighted with the attendance and interest excited and more especially with the

Collection, £28.10.-. Noble indeed for so small a place. G.P. Ball Esq. presided. The principal speaker was the Rev: D. Cargill A.M. lately from Fudge – a man of first rate talent. His description of Heathenism in Fudge is really horrifying.

Friday Morning left Ross and late in the Evening arrived at Mountford, the hospitable Mansion of G.P. Ball Esq: where we were most kindly entertained. About two O'clock today (Saturday) we came to the end of our Journey all safe & well – myself, wife, nine children and a servant woman. Our friends here received us in the most cordial manner, especially our Relatives Mr. & Mrs. Sherwin. O that our coming to this place may be an everlasting blessing unto many Souls!

Sunday, 22 – Preached twice to good congregations with tolerable freedom to myself, and I hope profit to the people and afterwards met the Society, many of whom were present and after whose welfare may my soul be ever drawn out in eager, fervent desire. O that I may live to promote the Glory of God in saving sinners here!

Sat: 28 – This has been a week of bustle and toil unpacking and getting affairs a little arranged in our new habitation. Was much delighted at the Prayer Meeting on Monday Eveng. The attendance was good & the feeling very encouraging. On Teuesday Evening Mr. Gleadow accompanied me to his Farm at Harland Rise where I preached with good feeling to a very attentive Congregation, principally Govt. Men. They were exceedingly attentive, and I do hope some lasting good was produced upon some of their minds. Preached in Launceston again on Wedy. Evening and felt pretty much at home from “Jabez’s Prayer”. O that I may be blessed indeed! The weather has been exceedingly hot and oppressive during the last few days and some of my family have been poorly.

[Page 207]

November – 1840

Sunday, 29 – Preached at Longford this Morning & Evening and at Cressy in the afternoon. On each occasion the Congregations were encouraging, and the attention very good. The word appeared to be with power to some who wept a good deal. O that their gracious fruit may remain.

Sunday, Decr. 6 – This has been a most profitable Sabbath to my own Soul, and the people generally appeared as though watered from on high. There was a very gracious influence pervading the Congn. in the Morning while I addressed them from “The Cananitish Woman” - and much feeling while the ordinance of Baptism was administered to the Infant Son of our excellent friend Philip Oakden Esq. In the afternoon I heard Mr. Ball at Margate St: Chapel Preach an excellent Sermon from “If we confess our sins he is faithful & just to forgive us our sins &c”. Blessed Man! May his labours be crowned with abunt. success. Preached in the Evening to a deeply attentive & affected congregation from our Lord’s “Agony in the Garden” – after which the Sacrament was administered – and here in the breaking of Bread the Lord was made known to us indeed.

Sat: 12 – Have commenced the important & interesting work of giving Tickets this week, and am rejoiced to find the people so much alive to their own interests. My own Spirit has been refreshed, and stimulated to more vigorous exercise in faith & love.

Sunday, 13 – Another good Sabbath. Bless the Lord O my Soul! In the Morning my

subject was "Rejoice evermore, Pray without ceasing, and in every thing give thanks &c" – and in the Evening "the Divine Omniscience from Heb: 4 – 13 – a heart searching Sermon. Afterwards we had a spirit stirring Prayer Meeting. Two Souls professed to enter into Gospel rest. Glory be to God these drops portend a glorious shower. O for a blessed Revival!

[Page 208]

Sat: 19 – Have had a busy but interesting week giving Tickets to most of the Classes in Town, and blessed be God I find he is deepening his work in the Souls of most of the Members. My own soul has been graciously quickened & blessed.

Sunday 20 – A blessed time this Morning from "For the Lord God is a Sun & Shield &c". Many were much affected. Refreshing season in the afternoon in giving Tickets. In the Evening was not free from "And Joshua said, why hast thou troubled us, the Lord shall trouble thee this Day". The home truths however I hope will not be without their designed effect. O for a searching of heart!

Monday, 21 – At 4 A.M. left home for Wesley Dale nearly fifty miles to the west in company with Messrs. Oakden, Gleadow & Ferguson, where we arrived in about twelve hours, tolerably weary, and not very comfortable, having met with a most tremendous thunder storm by the way in which we had got a good wetting. We met with a kind reception by the Overseer & his wife at Mr. Reed's Farming Establishment & excellent refreshment.

In the Evening had all the people assembled nearly forty in number to whom I Preached with good freedom from the "Prodigal Son". There was good feeling.

Tuesday, 22 – In the Morning took a general view of the Farm with which I was much delighted. The greater part of it is an extensive swamp, but when drained will become the richest Land in the Colony. Was grieved to see the Caterpillars doing so much mischief to the Crops of Grain and also English grapes. For multitude never saw any thing like to them.

At noon had an interesting little service with the People on Mr. Oakden's Farming Establishment (another delightful & valuable Farm). Have seldom felt more at home than on this occasion, and sincerely trust the seed sown will not be in vain.

[Page 209]

In the Evening first met the society about twenty in number for Tickets and was much encouraged & blest. The Leader Wm. Pitt was a most notorious sinner, a convict but about four years ago became converted and has since walked steadily in the ways of the Lord, and the Lord has raised him to honour among the people who have been committed to his charge. Besides leading the Class, He conducts two & sometimes three Public services every Sabbath – "O the Power of grace Divine!"

After giving Tickets found a congregation of about fifty Persons assembled (in the large House that blessed man Mr. Reed has built for his Men to live in, and for the worship of his God) to whom I Preached from "Who when he came and had seen the grace of God was glad" – Afterwards Prayer. Baptized four interesting Children. It was a soul refreshing Season to me, and I hope of lasting good to those simple hearted & I believe sincere souls.

Wed: 23 – Left my companions and came back to Westbury, where I Preached in their neat little Chapel to ten Persons on the new Birth and afterwards met the little Class seven in number for Tickets. Here our cause is very low, arising principally from the following circumstances – Its distance from Town so that it cannot be

regularly supplied with efficient help – The want of a stirring active Person on the spot – And the conduct of some who have backsliden from the Lord and disgraced his cause. Mr. & Mrs. White are excellent people and under their roof I found a very comfortable home.

Thursday, 26 – My companions arrived about ten from the westward and I accompanied them home and was thankful to find my family & friends all well. After Tea rode out to the Springs and gave Tickets to Mr. Bartleys class. Had a very profitable time.

[Page 210]

Friday, 25 – Christmas Day. Attended the early Prayer Meeting, and at Eleven Preached from “Verily he took not on him the nature of angels, but he took upon him the seed of Abraham”. To myself it was a dull time. Spent the afternoon with a few friends at the House of our excellent friend Mr. Jennings, and in the Evening attended a Meeting in the Rev: Mr. Wests Independent chapel, and at their request addressed the Meeting, and seldom have I been favoured with better feeling & liberty. The subject was the importance of Missy. operations in the Colony. There appeared for a time a regular move in the chapel.

Sunday, 27 – Was called this Morning to sympathize with our Dear Bro: & Sister Brooks in following the Remains of their little Boy to the House appointed for all living, of whom they have just been bereaved after a severe affln. of about ten Days of water on the Brain. They are both very poorly themselves, and their only remaining Child is in a very delicate state.

At Eleven Preached at Longford, and again in the Evening, but had hard uncomfortable work. My Body was weak, my Spirits somewhat depressed, and the Congn. very thin. This place is in a low state.

In the afternoon at Cressy had a solemn & profitable season from the Parable of the “Ten Virgins”.

Monday, 28 – Returned home & brought Mrs. Brooks and Child with me, and arranged for Mr. B. to follow us tomorrow, being persuaded that a change is absolutely necessary for them at present.

Poor Bro: B – I fear he is in a very weakly state both of Body and mind but trust the change to Town for a short time will be beneficial to him, and also to his wife and Child. “What various forms of human woe excite our softest sympathies!”

[Page 211]

1840

Teusday, 29 – Held our Quarterly Meeting. The Local Preachers Meeting continued from nine to Twelve and at Twelve the regular business of the Quarterly Meeting commenced, and was conducted in the most comfortable manner of any I ever attended. All was harmony and real brotherly love. Our increase was only four but we were thankful for these, and rejoiced especially ~~and~~ in the general conviction that the Lord is deepening his work in the Church. Poor Brooks was obliged to go to Bed being so ill.

In the Evening we held our Quarterly Lovefeast and it was to me & I believe to most a hallowing soul refreshing season.

Thursday, 31 – Watch Night. Commenced at nine by a sermon from myself from Eccel. 9 – 15 – followed by addresses from Messrs. Crooks, Jacobs and Sherwin –

with the latter especially I was much pleased and profited. The attendance was good and the attention & apparent interest very encouraging. The last five Minutes which were spent in solemn silence, were solemn indeed. And I verily believe the language of most hearts was "Take my poor heart and let it be for ever closed to all but thee!". Thanks forever to my God for his sparing mercy to me & mine, and for that gracious influence imparted to my Soul at this solemn, closing Midnight scene! Lord let me be forever thine!

O how soon my span of Life will be over! And how important that I be prepared to render up my account with joy and not with dread. Of much in my past life I am greatly ashamed & would lie in the Dust before the Lord – Lord forgive! Renew fully in thine image and keep me evermore!

[Page 212]

Journal for Eighteen Hundred & 41.

January, 3rd – Sunday. Preached this morning on the Parable of the "Ten Virgins", but was not favoured with that freedom of soul in the delivery which I desired.

Nevertheless it was a solemn, heart searching season.

In the afternoon Renewed the Covenant with the Society, and a more solemn, heavenly season I never attended. God did indeed crown us with his presence and blessing. My own soul was deeply humbled and sweetly elevated, and with heart sincere did I give myself afresh to God.

In the Evening Brooks Preached from "I know thou wilt bring me to death & to the House apd. for all living". The sermon was solemn & impressive and poor Man He literally looked like one dropping into the Grave.

After Service we had a Prayer Meeting in the School Room at which the Lord made bare his saving arm. About a Dozen came up as Penitents in deep distress that we might intercede with the Lord for them nor did we Pray in vain. About half this number professedly entered into Gospel liberty. Two or three of these were Backsliders. Glory be to God for this reviving feeling thus going forth amongst us!

Monday, 4 – Missionary Prayer Meeting at which I read Mr. Bumby's Tour round the Northern Island of New Zealand – with which and other remarks which were made respecting that interesting Mission, all appeared deeply interested.

Perceiving a very powerful influence pervading the Meeting, & knowing there were awakened sinners present, I called a second Prayer after the regular hour for Public Prayer had passed away, and we again saw the hand of the Lord made bare in three others receiving the assurance of God's forgiving love.

[Page 213]

January 1841

Saturday, 9 – This has been a week of Toil and anxiety and yet blessed be my God a week of gracious feeling. My youngest Child has been dangerously ill, my eldest Daughter & Wife likewise very poorly – and poor Mr. Brooks only Child hanging between Life & Death.

Have been called during this week to Baptize two Children just on the point of Death. Report says more than Twenty Children have died in Launceston alone during this week, principally from Bowel Afflictions.

Yesterday Morning I rode to Norfolk Plains, and married Mr. Charles Whyte to Miss Emma Dowsett – and I pray that their union may be Eternally blessed.

In the Evening Preached at Mr. Wickham's on the Liffy, and was thankful to behold what God had done in and for that large & interesting family. Returned home this

morning and was thankful to find my wife & eldest Daughter improving but our Baby still very unwell.

Sunday, 10 – Very unwell with cold & sore throat this Morning, still ventured through the Rain to my appointments at Longford & Cressy. At the former place had but few People on account of the Rain. At the latter the attendance was not what I expected, but they were very attentive and feeling both Afternoon & Evening. My subjects were “The Ability of Christ to save unto the uttermost” and “His Sufferings for Sins the just for the unjust that he might bring us to God”. After Evening service I administered the Sacrament to the little Society.

Spent the Night at the House of Mr. Lee, a Plain , but very industrious Farmer. He is blessed with an excellent Pasture and six fine Children and blessed by God.

Religion is beginning to find its way to the Parents’ hearts. May they all become [indecipherable].

[Page 214]

Sunday, 17 – Very poorly in Body and much exercised in mind all day & seldom have I had harder work in Preaching. Satan was not wanting to improve these barren seasons to his own advantage over me. I retired to rest excessively weary in Body and much distressed in mind. Lord help thy unworthy Servant!

Thursday, 21 – Today on my return from Cressy I found my Poor Colleague & Wife had just arrived at Longford with the Remains of their only remaining Child. I was just in time to see her deposited in the same Grave in which her little Brother had been Buried not a month before. How painful is this Bereavement to our dear friends, but the Lord has hitherto given them supporting grace in this trying hour. O that this bereavement may be sanctified to them and the Church at large.

Sunday, 24 – A good Sabbath to my own Soul. Felt quickened at the 7 Oclock Prayer Meeting. At 11 we had an excellent Congn. unto whom I Preached with good freedom from Math: 22 – 1-10 – The Marriage Feast.

In the Afternoon I Preached in the open air to a large Company in St. Giles’ the worst part of the Town. But all behaved very well, and to ~~whom~~ some I trust the word was Spirit and Life.

The Chapel was well attended again in the Evening to whom I Preached from “And when the King came in to see the Guest, he saw there a Man that had not on a Wedding Garment”. Solemn subject! O that I at last may be found of him in Peace without spot!

Sunday, 31 – A most Laborious but interesting day at Wesley Dale & Mr. Oakden’s Farm. Preached three times to about fifty hearers. Met their Class which is doing well and gave the Sacrament to the Society. Felt very weary but much refreshed in Spirit.

[Page 215]

Feb: 1841

Monday, 15 – Returned this Evening from a visit to the other side of the Island where I was gladly received by my old friends in Hobart Town &c. Spent Sabbath 7th with Mr. Longbottom at New Norfolk, and Preached for him three times. Poor Man his health continues very bad, and from that and other causes the Congregation are greatly fallen off. New Norfolk is a Dead Place!

The Hobart Town Congregations they say have improved a little, but the Society I

fear has not.

Left H. Town on Thursday & Preached at the Bridge in the Evening, but was very unwell.

Had an interesting service at my old friend Mr. Johnson's of the Green Ponds on Friday Evening.

Yesterday Preached at Ross in the Morning, Campbell Town in the Afternoon & Mr. Leek's, three miles from the latter place in the Evening and had upon the whole an encouraging Day.

Was thankful to find my family in better health than when I left them. Thanks be to my God for Journeying Mercies, and Preserving care over me & mine!

March 22 – Since the date of my last entry I have been very busily employed both for Body & Mind. The removal to our New Mission House &c has occasioned me a good deal of labour. During the last fortnight have been giving Tickets and have had some delightful seasons in so doing. Had a good day yesterday, but am ready to grow discouraged because we do not [indecipherable] sincere converts to God.

Sunday, 28 – Was favoured with good Congregations and good freedom today, especially out of Doors at two O'clock. Many attended and the word appeared to take hold of the people.

My strength was completely exhausted, but thankful in Spirit for the refreshing seasons with I had been favoured.

[Page 216]

March

Monday, 29 – Held our Quarterly Lovefeast this Evening and I do not remember ever to have attended a more interesting. It was indeed a season of refreshing from the presence of the Lord. "The Lord of Hosts is with us" – Hallelujah.

Tuesday, 30 – Quarterly Meeting. All was Harmony and Love. A resolution was unanimously adopted that henceforth they would support their own Preachers, and commenced at once by meeting the present Quarters Deficiency. These are a noble minded people!

At seven in the Evening held a Watchnight. Brother Lapiter Preached an excellent sermon from "But be thou in the fear of the Lord all the Day long, for there is an end & thine expectation shall not be cut off". The Brethren Smith and Crooks gave excellent addresses. The Meeting was one of great interest to all present – and the attendance was excellent.

April 4 – Preached at Longford this morning but was come to Town for Evening on account of Brother Brooks' affliction. We had an excellent time at the Sacrament. Praise God!

Good Friday – 9 – Preached in the morning from "For Christ also hath once suffered for Sins &c" and heard Bro: Crooks Preach a good Sermon in the Evening from "Who for the joy that was set before him endured the Cross &c".

Sunday, 11 – A good Day in my xtn Experience and in my public Ministrations. Preached in the Morning from "The Lord is risen indeed & hath appeared unto Simon" and in the Evening from "For thou will not leave my Soul in Hell &c". The Congregations were excellent and the attention & feeling good. O may the Spirit Divine seal the word upon the hearts of the people!

[Page 217]

April – 1841

Monday 19 – Returned home today from Wesley Dale, distant full forty Miles. Spent a very gracious Sabbath with the People in that place. Preached for them four times & met their Class but felt happily repaid for my toil in the delights the people manifested while sitting under the word, and the confidence with which my Breast was inspired that my labour was not in vain in the Lord.

We had a very full attendance & a blessed feeling at our Prayer Meeting this Evening.

June, 7th – Since my last entry have passed through some severe mental conflicts arising out of the state of the Church, my Family &c &c. Several in the Church have been walking [indecipherable] & have had to be cut off. These things cause my hands to hang down, and my spirits to flag within me. The enemy of Souls has been thrusting hard at my Peace.

August 7th – Arising out of the affliction of my Colleague Mr. Brooks I have had very much of late to engage my attention and occupy my time. Yet I bless my God hitherto my strength has been in proportion to my labour and I have been favoured with much encouragement in my work. Our cause is now reviving.

My Colleague has just been bereaved by Death of his excellent wife, but she made a glorious finish. Tomorrow God willing I shall try to improve the event. O what a world of vicitude, affliction and Death is this in which we live! Lord prepare me for all.

Mon: 30th – Sunday School Anniversary – Exciting and interesting season.

Congregations yesterday were excellent. Bro: Butters Preached the morning sermon (an excellent one) from “Let him know that he that converteth the Sinner &c”, I in the Evening from “I rejoiced greatly that I found

[Page 218]

of thy Children walking in truth”. Was not free – congr. very large, and deeply attentive. The public Meeting tonight went off very well yet not much good speaking.

September, Thursday 2nd – Rode up to the Nile (a new place) yesterday and had a pleasing congr. in their little Chapel in the Evening – and by the wish of the people Preached for them again at Mr. Glovers at seven this Morning, when we had a very softening, melting season. Held another meeting at Mr. Mitchell’s at ten Oclock with a few and at One Preached again at Mr. Pikes, where the Lord was present to melt the hearts of the people. Glory be to God there is a powerful awakening amongst the people of this secluded but interesting settlement. Ten have begun to meet together in Class, and I have resolved upon giving them all the help in my power. Gave Tickets to Mr. Bartley’s Class on my way home where I arrived about ten Oclock weary enough.

Tuesday, 28 – Held our Quarterly Meeting today which was one of great harmony & Peace – and was very thankful to find that an increase of members this Quarter has been considerable, and notwithstanding the great depression in Trade &c our Finances are better than on any former occasion.

October 6th – Returned from Hobart Town this Evening from a visit to our Excellent Genl. Superintendant who has just returned from the Friendly & Fijee Islands. Our interview tho short was very agreeable and the friends in general were very kind.

The cause however I fear is not progressing in my old Circuit of the Town. The Island Missions in general are wearing a pleasing aspect, though there are some things of a discouraging character connected with them. Mr. & Mrs. Fisher have arrived from Tonga, His health having greatly failed.

[Page 219]

Oct: 1841

Sat: 30th – Thanks be to my heavenly Father I am brought to the close of another week & nearly another month in tolerable health of Body, and in Peace of mind. This week I have been visiting our Members, Praying with and Preaching to them in several of the Country places: found it very profitable to my own Soul and will doubtless be followed with good to the people. Next week God willing we commence our D. Meeting. O may the Holy Spirit Preside over us!

Nov: 3rd – Wednesday – Our Genl. Supt. with all the Brethren arrived to commence the D. Meeting tomorrow. Mr. Waterhouse gave us an excellent Sermon from “Simon son of James lovest thou me?” The Congn. was excellent and the feeling very good.

Thursday 4 – Our regular District Meeting began this Morning and continued until Tuesday the ninth, keeping us very close at work from six in the Morning until late each Evening.

We had a very agreeable Meeting as a whole though there were several matters that occasioned some degree of pain to my mind. Our Genl. Supt. kept us all alive as usual with his witty remarks. I never met with his equal for exciting the [indecipherable] faculties – But this to me is not profitable – It does not tend to devotedness to God.

Sunday 7th – Our Missy. Sermons were Preached in the morning by Mr. Simpson from – Mr. Longbottom in the afternoon from “Ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus &c &c” – a good Sermon. In the Evening Mr. Waterhouse from Isaiah 55 Ch. “Ye shall go out with Joy & be led forth with Peace”. They were three most excellent Sermons, and were listened to by large & deeply attentive congns. The Collections were very good for the times.

[Page 220]

Monday 8th – This Evening was held our Missy. Meeting which was very well attended. The Revds. Dowling, Price, West, Longbottom &c spoke very well but our Genl. Supt. was the Soul of the Meeting. He spoke for two hours and gave us a great deal of interesting information respecting New Zealand, the Friendly & Feejie Islands, from a visit to which he had just returned. The People in general appeared deeply interested. The Collection was very good making full £20 including the cols. of yesterday which is an amt. fully equal to our expectations considering the state of trade.

Tuesday 9 – This afternoon Mr. Waterhouse left us accompanied by Mr. W. & Mr. Butters for Longford to hold a Missionary Meeting there. He was very poorly & the Day was very wet & unfavourable for their going. O that his efforts may be followed with an abundant blessing to the People.

Decr. 31 – Since my last entry in my Journal I have had to labour hard in consequence of the affliction of my Colleague who for the last three weeks has been

entirely laid aside.

My own health has been failing much for the last three or four weeks, so that from weakness & excessive labour I have been fearing I should soon be laid aside. This has been giving my mind some concern on account of the Church over which I am placed. Several of the places have been neglected & the people complain. May it please the Lord to spare me a little longer and give me strength to labour for his cause. I love my God – I love his cause and wish to live for him alone. O for a greater conformity to his image and will in all things!

[Page 221]

Jan: 1842

Journal for 1842

Sunday, 2nd – Commenced my labours of this year in great bodily weakness, and under considerable depression of Spirit arising out of the same.

My subject this Morning was the “Barren Fig Tree”. The congregation was good & deeply attentive, but I was not favoured with degree of liberty which is my usual portion. The word however had weight.

In the Evening I Preached a short Sermon from Jeremiah 50 – 5, 6 – and afterwards read the form of Covenant to the Society, which as usual was sealed with the Lords Supper. It was a most solemn and soul refreshing season. Oh that this may be to me & the People of my charge a year never to be forgotten. Lord sanctify me to thyself!

Sunday 9th – Longford – Preached here morning & Evening & at Cressy in the afternoon. The people listened with devout attention, but I did not feel so much at home as I could wish. Why is it that out of so many Souls who listen so devoutly to our Ministrations so few are converted. O Lord pour out thy Spirit upon us & the People!

Sunday 16 – Preached this Morning in weakness from 2 Pet: 2 – 9 – and my Poor Colleague having come in to embark for Hobart Town tomorrow I left him to Preach in the Evening, and myself rode out to the Plains & Preached there in the Evening but found it very hard work principally arising out of my very weak state of health.

Monday 17 – Rode in this Morning to see my poor Colleague before he left for Hobart Town. Poor Man I fear his Ministerial career is nearly at an end. His health is bad indeed.

[Page 222]

He appears very likely soon to follow his excellent wife & two lovely Babes to the grave. May our gracious Lord fully prepare him for all his will!

Thursday 20 – Left home this Morning accompanied by my eldest Daughter to spend a Fortnight in the Ross Circuit in exchange with Bro: Butters.

About Sunday down we arrived in safety at Skelton Castle the residence of Cap: Dixon whose amenable Sister a pious Quakeress received us gladly. Her Bro: was from home. Addressed the Servants from “Moses lifting up the Serpent in the Wilderness”. They listened very attentively. Returned to rest very tired. The day had been excessively hot, and I had unfortunately wandered some miles out of our way.

Friday 21 – About noon today got safe to Ross, and were well received by Cap: & Mrs. Horton and Bro: Butters, who had just come in from Hobart Town where he had been attending their Missy. Meeting and making Proposals of Marriage to Miss Waterhouse, Daughter of our Genl. Supt. – and I am thankful his proposals have been accepted. She will be a “Help meet for him”.

Sunday 23 – Ross, Campbell Town & Summercotes were my Preaching places today. Was not at all comfortable morning & afternoon, but was favoured with liberty in the Evening. The Chapel & congregations to me appeared very small in comparison of ours at Launceston.

Thursday 27 – Monday. Met the Class at Summercotes – six Persons Present. Tuesday met the Class at Ross only four Members in attendance – Little work! Wednesday Preached to the Road Party at Campbell Town at 5 O'clock, and at 7 to about 15 hearers in their little Chapel.

[Page 223]

Today rode to Oatlands and united in Marriage Mr. Mars Millan & Miss Flemming – Two of our Members and I believe both truly Pious, yet fear their union will give great offence to some – Her family being much superior to his.

Sunday 30 – Preached at Oatlands this morning to a very interesting & attentive congregation from “Who when he came and has seen the grace of God” and met their little Class at which we had a very profitable season. One Man attended for the first time. Drove down to Green Ponds and had a Meeting at Mr. Johnson’s at seven, but few attended.

Monday 31 – Went down by Coach & Steamer to Hobart Town and arrived amongst my old friends about one O'clock. Spent the afternoon and Evening with my Brethren & Friends all of whom received me very kindly. Was sorry to find their Prayer Meeting so thinly attended in the Evening.

Feb: 1 – Tuesday – Accompanied Bro: Simpson to see Mr. Waterhouse who has been long afflicted. On our arrival at the Cottage we found them getting him into a Carriage to try whether the air would do him any good. The little exertion had all but overcome him. He looked at me and wept but was not able to converse with me at all. He made an effort to say a few words which I could not understand being uttered in so low a tone. His appearance to me was quite affecting; quite emaciated, like one sinking into the grave. Lord pity thy Servant! Conversed with Miss W. for some time and left word that I wished if possible to see Mr. W. again before I returned, but received a message saying that he was too low to see me. I could not but feel disappointed having gone over partly on purpose to condole with him &c. Poor Man!

[Page 224]

Feb: 1842

From all accounts his nervous system is awfully shattered. Lord support his fainting mind and while heart & flesh fails, be thou the strength of his heart and his Portion forever!

Preached at Davey Street this Evening to an increased and attentive Congregation from Job, “Hast thou not made a hedge about him &c”.

Friday, 4th – Left Hobart Town on Wednesday afternoon and arrived home in safety

this Evening and found all my family well, for which I thank the Lord, as also for his preserving & comforting mercy to me his poor Servant while absent from my family & people. My health is a little improved, and I hope to be yet able to labour in the vineyard of my Lord.

Sunday, 6 – Preached with freedom this Morning to a good Congn. from “And to reserve the unjust to the day of Judgment to be punished”. In the Evening the attendance was not so good, principally owing to the excessive heat. I preached from that favourite text, “Behold the lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the World” – but had hard work. The heat was excessive & truly oppressive. We had a profitable time at the Sacrament: but I was much fatigued.

Sunday 13 – Was favoured with liberty today both Morning & evening. “The Almost Xtn” was my subject in the Morning, and in the Evening “If the righteous scarcely be saved where shall the ungodly & sinner appear?” The truth appeared to be with power, but alas! few are disposed to give up their hearts to God.

Sunday 20 – Took my stand in the street this afternoon, where many heard from “So ever that ye may obtain” - Preparatory to the Races – Good session in the Evening from John 15 – 19, “Not of the World”.

[Page 225]

Feb: & March 1842

Sunday 27th – Longford – The congregations were pretty good both Morning & Evening, and deeply attentive. On the former occasion I preached from “As ye have therefore received xt Jesus the Lord so walk ye in him” and on the latter from “If ye were of the World, the world would love its own, but because I have chosen you &c”. O may our gracious Lord follow with his blessing the word of truth that the people may be saved.

March 6th – Launceston. Preached this Morning from Hosea 6 – 4 – “What shall I do unto thee O Ephraim &c”. The people were deeply attentive, and some even moved. In the Evening I had a good time from “By grace are ye saved thro faith &c” and the Lord was made known unto us afterwards in the “Breaking of Bread”. There was much of joyous, hallowing feeling at the Sacramental Table – Praise the Lord O my Soul!

Tuesday, 15 – Was very unwell most of last week of Lumbago, but ventured to Westbury on Friday afternoon. Preached in the Evening from Deut: 1-21.

Saturday rode up to Wesley Dale & Preached from same.

Sunday – Met the Class for Tickets at 10 Oclock, and was happy to find them growing in grace.

At 11 Preached from Titus 2 – 10, 14 – Delightful theme.

In the afternoon & Evening Preached at Mr. Oakdene’s Farm with good freedom & I hope some effect.

Monday returned to Westbury where I again Preached and gave Tickets to the little Class which is doing well.

Returned home today much better in Body and I hope improved in spirituality of mind also.

Sat: 19 – By the Mercy of my God I am brought to the close of another eventful week – a week of Solemn call to me & others to be ready for another world. On Wednesday I was called to Inter the Remains of a little Child – on

[Page 226]

Thursday to follow to the House appointed for all living the Remains of the late Daniel Robertson Esq: who was Drowned on Saturday last while out a fishing. Cut off in the midst of his years & his wealth. O to be ready.

Today I have inter'd the Remains of George Brently one of our Members whom the Lord has suddenly called to himself, but he was ready waiting the Master's call – Glory to God.

Distressing news today respecting poor Mr. who appears to be rapidly hastening home. O may the Lord remember for good while passing thro the vale!

Monday, 21 – Yesterday was not one of my best days – was greatly tried in my family early in the morning and yielding too much to temper I became greatly distressed in my mind & harnessed by the Devil.

Preached in the Morning from Jonah 2 – 4 – awful subject - To be cast out of God's sight.

Met a class for Tickets in the Afternoon, and in the Evening Preached from "Set thine house in order for thou shalt die and not live", but was far from being free in my mind. O for a closer walk with God! & more of the Power of the Spirit!

Monday 28 – Have been very poorly the last few days. On Good Friday morning could hardly Preach at all. Yesterday I Preached three times – Salem, Cressy, & Longford, and gave Tickets at the former place in the Morning. A heavier day I have not for a long time experienced. My Soul felt barren & powerless, as well as my Body Physically weak. Merciful God quicken thou my soul that I may enjoy more of thy favour, and more fully live thy name to glorify – Amen.

[Page 227]

March – 1842

Tuesday 30 – Have just heard from Hobart Town that our Genl. Supt. Mr. Waterhouse was sinking into the arms of Death. All hope of his recovery is over, and his Medical Attendant has pronounced him dying. This I feel to be afflictive intelligence. But blessed be God he is in a blessed frame of mind, and though by his Removal the loss of the Church will be great, to him the change will be Glorious, and the gain Eternal.

Tomorrow morning I purpose if the Lord permit to set off for Hobart Town to see him if alive, and attend his Funeral if Dead. O my gracious Lord have pity upon me, and help me to live nearer to thyself.

Saturday – April 2 – About one today arrived in Hobart Town, and found that our dear Bro: Waterhouse had quitted this Mortal vale on Wednesday night, a little before nine O'clock and of his triumphant entrance into the everlasting Kingdom no doubt can be entertained, although the very depressing matter of his affliction forbade his saying much. I waited upon his widow & family and found them sustaining their bereavement with Christian fortitude and resignation. This afflictive dispensation preys much upon my own Spirits, and I find it exciting universal Sympathy in this Town. His Death will be regarded and felt as a public calamity. O how mysterious are the dispensations of Providence! Poor Mr. Bumby & now Mr. Waterhouse, two of the most likely men for great public usefulness that have been sent into this part of the vineyard are both gone. Lord, may I be ready for thy summons!

[Page 228]

April – 1842

Sunday 3rd – Very weak & poorly in Body, yet I Preached in Davey Street in the Morning, visited their Sunday School & addressed the Children in the Afternoon and Preached in Melville Street in the Evening after which I assisted to administer the Sacrament but did not enjoy much freedom of Soul through the day, nevertheless I hope it was a profitable day to myself and others.

From the smallness of the Congregations &c &c I fear the cause in Hobart Town is not in so prosperous state as in former days.

Monday – 4th – Employed the Morning in writing to the Comtee. and to Mr. McKinney, Chairman of the N.S. Wale District upon the subject of our late Genl. Supt's Death. In the Afternoon with the bereaved family & arranged for Interring his Remains in the new Wesleyan Burying ground. In the Evening attended a Trustee Meeting.

Tuesday 5 – This afternoon I performed the last sad office for the Remains of our departed Brother & Friend – Committed him to the Silent Tomb. The attendance on the funeral was very large, amongst whom were fourteen Ministers. While preparing the Funeral Service my own mind was deeply affected. O that I may go to my Grave in Peace and overtake my Brother in the [indecipherable]!

After the Funeral was over I called the Brethren together when we held a Special District Meeting – in which we Recorded our deep Sympathy with the Church in the loss it has sustained, and resolved as Preachers to erect a Marble Tablet to his Memory in the new Chapel in Hobart Town.

[Page 229]

April 1842

Friday 8th – Arrived home this Evening improved both in health of Body & Mind, and found my family all pretty well. Thanks be to God for his preserving care.

Sunday 10th – Preached with pretty good freedom this morning from “It is God who justifieth, who is he that condemneth, it is Christ that died &c” – and in the Evening from “If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ let him be Anathama, Maranatha” – Solemn season – Sacrament.

Tuesday 12th – Held our Quarterly Meeting which had been put off in consequence of my going on to Hobart Town. It was one of great harmony, but more thinly attended any former meeting several of the [indecipherable] men being from home. Good Watchnight!

Sunday 17th – Preached this Morning from Acts 14 Ch. – 21, & 22 was Good subject – congregation very thin, the weather being very wet and cold.

In the Evening I endeavoured to improve the Death of our late Genl. Supt. the Rev: John Waterhouse from “For me to live is Christ; and to die is gain”. The attendance was very good considering the weather. At the close of the Sermon I read some accounts of his Conversion – Lazarus – Suffering & Death drawn up by his excellent Son Jabez. The people were deeply attentive during the whole service and I sincerely hope the interesting account will be blessed to many.

Wed: 20 – Have heard today that the Triton has arrived and I must therefore go over again to Hobart Town to get her despatched again for the Islands as soon as possible. Am thankful to learn the Mission prospers in New Zealand.

Preached this Evening from "Create in me a clean heart O God, & renew a right Spirit within me". The word appeared to have weight upon the people and I pray God that we may all be made partakers of this great Saln. "A Clean heart".

[Page 230]

Sunday 24th – Launceston – Took up those words of our Lord this morning "For the Children of this world are in their generation wiser than the Children of light" but did not get my Soul free – nevertheless I hope the truth spoke home to the hearts of the people. In the Evening I Preached from a favourite text – Psalm 51 – 1-6 – But was again bound in Spirit. I feel that my Soul needs more unction from on high. Lord draw me nearer to thyself! Amen.

Sat: 30 – Hobart Town – Left home on Tuesday Morning & arrived here on Thursday Noon, Since which I have been very busy writing to the Islands and attending to the affairs of the Missy. Ship Triton. Every thing of importance being got on Board I was enabled to settle all Accs. this Evening to be ready to leave for home early on Monday Morning. Retired to rest truly weary but thankful that the object of my visit was satisfactorily brought to a close.

Sunday – May 1st – Preached at Melville St: today Morning & Evening – In the Morning was greatly tried. The Singers got sadly astray & some behaved badly. Preached from Luke 16 – 8 – "Children of this World wiser in their genn. &c" Spoke with great plainness & fidelity, but was far from being comfortable. Dined with my Son at Mr. Crouch's and had some profitable conversation with them. Visited several of my old friends in the Afternoon & heard Mr. Jackson one of the Local Preachers – A very profitable Sermon. In the Evening we had a good congregation to whom I spoke with freedom from those solemn words "If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathama Maranatha". Afterwards administered the Sacrament – A Solemn & profitable season. Cap: Bush afterwards engaged in Prayer in a very affecting manner.

[Page 231]

May – 1842

Tuesday 3rd – Left Hobart Town by the Coach yesterday Morning to Green Ponds, from thence in my Gig to Captain Hortons last Evening, and arrived at home in safety tonight – was truly thankful to find my wife & infant Son doing so well. She had been Confined on Friday Evening last (April 29) about a quarter before twelve o'clock – A very fine Boy. Blessed be the Lord for his great mercy unto us as a family. This is our Fourteenth, but two are gone home to God – We have now six Sons, and six Daughters. O for grace to enable us to train them up for Heaven! Lord help me to feel my charge aright!

Sunday – 8th – This has been to me a profitable Sabbath. The congns. have been excellent both Morning & Evening. My texts were John 8 – 12 and Hab: 3 – 2, "O Lord revive thy work". To this Prayer I trust we shall soon have a glorious season in the conversion of many Souls – Amen.

Sunday – 15 – Whitsunday – Longford Morning and Evening and Cressy in the Afternoon. Was favoured with a gracious influence through the day. "Quench not the Spirit" was my text Morning and Afternoon, and in the Evening those most solemn words, "If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ let him be Anathama, Maranatha". Love save me from so great a condemnation! Amen.

Monday 16 – Arrived in the William this Evening from Sydney our old friend the Rev: John McKenny and seldom have I received a Friend & Brother under my roof with greater pleasure and I trust our feelings were reciprocal. He is in excellent health and good Spirits and brings a pleasing account of the work of God in his District in almost every place. All honour & praise to Jesus alone!

[Page 232]

Tuesday 24 – Returned from Hobart Town this Evening whither I had accompanied Mr. McKenny on business connected with the Missionary Ship Triton &c &c and am thankful everything is arranged as I could have wished. I have but little desire and less tact for public business and am therefore thankful that Mr. McKenny takes upon himself the affairs of the Triton in addition to the Agency for the Brethren in the Islands & New Zealand.

Our trip over though the weather has been very wet & cold has been beneficial to my health and thanks be to God my wife & Children are all doing well.

Wed: 25 – Bro: McKenny re-embarked on board the William to return to his family and flock. May the Lord direct & conduct him to them in health and Peace! His visit has been a very agreeable one to me, and I hope will be found to have been in the way of Providence.

Sunday 29 – Launceston. Preached three times with tolerable freedom, twice in the large and in the afternoon in the little Chapel. Texts Neh: 9 – 17-1 Chro: 4 – 10 - & Heb: 2 – 3. Congregations good. O may my feeble though I hope well aimed efforts be crowned with the blessing of my heavenly Master!

June – Thursday 2nd – Have this day been greatly tried with the conduct of Dr. Brown, one of the Clergymen of this Town in refusing to allow me to visit a poor young Man under Sentence of Death in accordance with his desire, and the Sheriff's personal request, and written permission. I never saw the Spirit of Popery more strongly expressed nor more fully carried out than on this occasion, but I leave the Doctor to his unenviable reflections and the righteous judge of all.

[Page 233]

June 1842

Thursday & Friday – Preached with great pleasure to myself & I trust profit to the people at two country places from “Create in me a clean heart O God”.

Sunday 5 – Good time this morning from “The possible Pit & Miry Clay &c” – and in the Evening from “The importance of the Gospel Ministry” 2 Cor: 6-2. In the afternoon at the little Chapel heard an excellent Sermon from Mr. Spry, a Local Preacher lately from England – text “Thy statutes have been my Song in the house of my pilgrimage”. Praise God.

Sunday 12 – Wesley Dale. The coldest place I have been in since I left England. The Frost this Morning was very severe – Ice $\frac{1}{4}$ of an Inch thick. Met their Class at 10 O'clock. Preached at 11, 3 & 6. The congregation were much smaller than formally but very attentive and I hope my visit amongst them will be found not to have been without some good effect.

Monday – Frost very severe again this Morning which made it very slippery &

dangerous travelling. I succeeded however in getting home safely by sun down but found I had taken rather a severe cold.

Sunday 19 – This has been one of my best Sabbaths. In the Morning I Preached from Job: 33 – 27, 28. Congn. good and very attentive. In the Evening I brought before “Blind Bartimeus” and seldom have I been favoured with greater freedom. The Chapel was full & every one appeared to feel it a Personal, All important matter. Glory to God! We have indication of better days!

Monday 20 – A blessed Revival broke out. This several appeared in deep distress and three or four found Peace with God, besides a goodly number of our old members appeared on full stretch for a clean heart. O may the sacred fire continue to burn and set us all on flame!

[Page 234]

Sat: 25 – Busy meeting Classes &c this week but have found it delightful work, as the people appear increasingly alive to their Everlasting interest. The Lord has been visiting us as a family with the rod in afflicting our tender Babe. For several days we have him under medical treatment, and have been ready to fear he would be taken from us. He is however thank the Lord now a little better. In consequence of his affliction we have this afternoon had him Baptized Privately by my Colleague, Mr. Gaud. We have named him Edwin James. May it please the Lord to spare him, and consecrate him to his service and Glory!

Sunday 26 – Longford – Preached in the Morning from the Horrible Pit, but felt myself too much like the Man in the Miry clay myself. Spirit up, cong. thin. Afternoon attended Mr. Ball’s Prayer Meeting when we had a very lively season. Thank God here are souls here of the right sort, men of strong faith and Mighty in Prayer. Here the Lord is carrying on a glorious work. Coll. Hazlewood of the Indian Army, Father to Mrs. Ball, a man nearly 80 years of age has become the subject of the saving grace of God and has cast in his lot with the yet despised followers of the Lamb. All honor and glory to Jesus alone!

In the Evening I Preached from Barnabas “Seeing the grace of God at Antioch”. The congregation was good and deeply attentive.

Monday 27 – Prayer Meeting very full tonight and a most gracious influence rested upon us. Several came up to the Penitent Bench, and one Man who was indeed deeply distressed, but between nine and ten the Lord set the Captive free.

[Page 235]

July 1842

Sunday, 3rd – Rode out this Morning to [indecipherable], gave Tickets & Preached, but on consequence of the heavy rain the cong. was thin. There was however a good feeling while I spoke from Rev: 8-3. Rode home through the very heavy rain & Preached in the Evening from the same text. Blessed subject! The intercession of the Lord Jesus – Plan – The People of God are Saints. The Saints are a prayer People. Their Prayers ascend with acceptance before God through the intercession of the Lord Jesus. Felt it profitable to my own Soul, and other people I hope were blessed.

Monday 4th – Held our Quarterly Lovefeast this Evening, and it was decidedly one of the best I ever attended. No time was lost for want of speakers, and almost every

testimony was of a most satisfactory character. Several were enabled to say "The blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all Sin". Glory to God for so many living witnesses! Oh! May I more than ever to his glory live!

Tuesday 5th – Quarterly Meeting – Met the Local Preachers at Nine A.M. Had a little dissention on the subject of Tee-Totalism which I was afraid would have ended painfully, but trust it will be overruled for good – leading to greater circumspection &c. Our attendance of Members at the Quyer Meeting was very good. Had some lengthy discussions, but all ended well – and the Day closed by one of the best Watch Nights I ever attended. Our Prospects are good.

Sunday 11th – A wet uncomfortable day – In consequence of which my cong. at Longford were rather thin. The people however were very attentive, and hope my feeble efforts to bless them in the Name of the Lord were not in vain. O for closer comn. with God!

[Page 236]

Sunday, 17th – A blessed Sabbath to my own Soul. Attended the seven O'clock Prayer Meeting, at which many were present & a very gracious influence was felt. The Congregation at Eleven was very good, and a very delightful influence pervaded the Meeting. During the first Prayers my mind was greatly drawn out, and the congregation powerfully moved. God was found.

Baptized the Children of Messrs. Oakdene & Sherwin and another who was a stranger. This was an interesting service. Many felt the influence divine.

Preached from Acts 22-16 – "And now why tarriest thou, arise & be baptized & wash away thy sins &c", but did not enjoy very good freedom.

In the Evening we had all but a crowded Chapel, to whom I spoke with great plainness of speech from "Verily, verily I say unto you, if a man keep my sayings he shall never see death". Was not at home, yet I hope many felt that truth was powerful. O that it may kill & make alive!

Held a Prayer Meeting afterwards in the Chapel to which many stayed. Some very powerful addresses were presented to the Throne, and some strong feeling was manifested, but we had no particular revival influence. Glory to God for this blessed Sabbath. May the fruit thereof remain, and abound to the glory of God!

Mon: 18th – Somewhat weary with the exertions of yesterday, but thankful & happy for the apparent good.

The Prayer Meeting this Evening was the best attended of any I have ever witnessed in Launceston. The large School Room was all but crowded and a strong & hallowed feeling pervaded this meeting. We held a protracted meeting, at which we had two or three Penitents & others feeling much. My own Soul was greatly blessed – all glory to God.

[Page 237]

July – 1842

Wed: 30th – Received a Letter from Bro: Egglestone from Hobart Town this Morning, informing me of his safe arrival with his family from Adelaide and that his health was in an improving state. For this I feel thankful to our Heavenly Father and hope his return amongst us will be made and everlasting blessing to many, many Souls. He is an excellent man, such an One as we much required.

Sunday 24 – Our Congregations today have been good and deeply attentive, and I

hope it will be found that the word Preached did not fall powerless upon them. Was not favoured with that freedom and deep feeling of soul which I sometimes enjoy. Still I found the presence of my Master with me.

Sunday 31 – Carrick & Westbury – Two small country Places – at the former I had about 25 Hearers & found it good to Preached to them from “If any Man serve me him will my father honor. Arranged for the formation of a little Class – Five will begin to meet next Sunday Morning.

My congregations at Westbury were about Forty Persons both Afternoon & Evening – and on both occasions I found it good to wait upon the Lord & minister the word of Life to the People.

August 7th – Sunday – This has been a labourious but very profitable Sabbath to my Soul. The Prayer Meeting at 7 A.M. was one of the best at which I have been present for some time. The attendance at 11 was very good but alas! I was indeed tied & bound. Still the People were most attentive and the word appeared to speak home.

In the Evening we had a charming cong. and I was favoured with freedom from that charming text Heb: 13 – 20, 21. Glory to God for the doctrine of Holiness! Very profitable time at the Sacrament – many present.

[Page 238]

August – 1842

Sunday 14 – Longford & Cressy – In the Morning I Preached with tolerable freedom from “If any Man serve me him will my Father honor” – and in the Afternoon from that choice & important text Heb: 13 – 20, 21 – “Now the God of Peace that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the Sheep, made you perfect &c”. Was favoured with very good liberty of Speech & hallowed feeling of Soul on both occasions. The Lord was present.

Heard of several pleasing instances of [indecipherable] being awakened & Souls Sanctified thro the Blood of the Covenant in the Circuit – Glory be to God He is reviving his work!

Thursday 18 – Very profitable season in Town last Evening from “For all the Promise of God in him are yea, & in him amen to the glory of God by us” – and tonight at Perth from the same text was favoured with good freedom. About fifty Persons were present & the Chapel appeared full of good feeling. Had a long & painful meeting afterwards with one of the Members who has been acting improperly. O when will all Professors walk worthy their high vocation! Lord sanctify us all unto thyself.

Sunday 21 – Blessed day – Sunday School Sermons by the Rev: John Egglestone lately arrived as an Invalid from Adelaide. Very weakly in his Body, but mighty in God by the indwelling of the Holy Ghost. The Chapel was very full especially in the Evening. The Sermons were excellent. In the Morning from “That the Soul be without knowledge is not good” – In the Evening from “Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might &c”. Truly the word was with power and I doubt not real good was affected. The Children behaved well, but the singing was not equal to former occasions. The collections amounted to about Twenty five Pounds, very good for the times. I pray God that the services of this day may be found to bring forth fruit unto Eternal life.

[Page 239]

August – 1842

Monday, 22nd – An interesting day with the children who passed their examination with great credit to themselves and their Teachers. In several of the Classes they were so equal that we were compelled to draw lots for the Prizes.

The Public Meeting in the Evening was well attended notwithstanding the rain. Several pleasing Speeches were delivered, and Bro: Egglestones especially told upon the people. He shewed in a very striking manner the connection that exists between divine influence and the proper use of divinely appointed persons and while speaking a mighty influence rested upon the assembly. I have not met with a man who appeared to have greater hold upon God than he.

Wed: 24 – A very crowded room this Evening to hear Mr. Egglestone, and never did I hear a Sermon more to the point that he gave us from “Is there no balm in Gilead, is there not a Physician with us?” A mighty unction rested upon all, and especially at the Prayer Meeting we held afterwards. Several sought and obtained the blessing of Perfect love. My own Soul was greatly humbled & quickened.

September Mon: 26 – Full a month has passed since my last entry during which I have passed through a variety of trials and exercises and some of these of a very painful character. One of our own Members has basely slandered me and my family – and another has attacked me on account of my Total Abstinence Principles in the Papers – while in the Country my Horse fell with me and upon me, but the Lord mercifully saved me from serious harm, though I have suffered from the effects of it more or less ever since. O may these things lead me to be more fully devoted to my God! Lord quicken thou me according to thy word!

[Page 240]

My mind was greatly comforted this Evening at the Lovefeast, it was one of the best I ever attended & some of the testimonies borne were the most clear & satisfactory I ever heard – Miracles of growth.

Tuesday 27 – Quarterly Meeting – All was Peace and our Numbers and Finances shewed a state of pleasing prosperity. In the Evening we had a very delightful watch night. Mr. Chaffey, a Local Preacher lately from England gave us a very excellent Sermon from “Lo I am with you always &c” – and several good addresses were afterwards Delivered.

Sunday, Oct: 2nd – This though a day of hard labour was one of happy freedom to my own Spirit. The services were well attended. Preached in the Morning from “The Cloud of Witnesses” and in the Evening “Who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross” – Sacrament.

Thursday 20th – Returned home this Evening from Hobart Town where we have been holding our District Meeting.

The Lord was very graciously present with us during our sittings. Not a single angry feeling, not one unkind word passed among us. We parted renewed in spirit, and sacredly pledged to Pray daily for each other, and to lay ourselves out for greater usefulness in the Church. Such a District meeting I never before attended for harmony & Brotherly love – “Behold how good & pleasant &c. No changes are now taking place in the District save between the Brethren Egglestone & Butters. O may the Great Head of the Church crown our every well meant effort with his abundant blessing! Amen.

Sunday, 23 – This Morning I was favoured with pretty good liberty from “Let us therefore come boldly to the throne of grace &c” – and in the Evening from “Brethren pray for us that the word of the Lord may have free course and be glorified”. Afterwards met the Society and found it a very profitable season to my own soul. Glory to God for an increase of Spirituality. “O for a closer walk with God &c!”

[Page 241]

Nov: 1842

Thursday 17th – Left home this Morning for Hobart Town to attend to the affairs of the Misy. ship Triton and arrived there on Saturday noon very poorly with cold, was kindly received by the friends in general. Took up my temporary abode with my old friend Hiddleton.

Sunday 20 – My cold was so bad that I was quite unfit for any public service whatever. In the morning heard Jabez Waterhouse Preach a very profitable Sermon from “Seek ye the Lord while he may be found, call ye upon him while he is near”. He will make a very useful Preacher. In the Evening heard Mr. Cargill on the “Wedding Garment, but it fell far short of my expectation. He was sadly too long and [indecipherable].

Friday, 25th – Having completed my arrangements for the vessel left Hobart Town for the Green Ponds, one of the most cold & rainy Days I have experienced for a long period. Such rain it is said has not been known in the Colony for many years.

Saturday 26 – Spent part of this Day in looking for my, borrowed Horse, which has leaped all the Fences and gone we know not where – so that our search was vain.

Sunday 27 – Got up to Oatlands by one O'clock. Met the little Class at two and in the Evening Preached from “For God hath not appointed us to wrath but to obtain Salvation by Jesus Christ” – Congregation thin nor did I feel much at home with them.

Tuesday 29 – Through mercy got home in safety and found my wife and family all well but no tidings of my runaway Horse. I hope however he will ere long be found or the loss will be very heavy to me. But this also I must leave to him who knows what is best.

[Page 242]

Decr.

Sunday 4 – Longford – Pretty good Congn. and pretty good freedom from “Are they not all Ministering Spirits sent forth to Minister to them who shall be heirs of Salv'n.” In the Evening I was favoured with good freedom from “For God hath not appointed us to wrath &c. The sacrament was a solemn & refreshing season.

Sunday 11th – This has been a hard but delightful day's work. Preached three times in Launceston and was favoured with good Congregations & good freedom on each occasion especially in the Evening from “And when they heard this held their peace and glorified God saying, then hath God also unto the Gentiles granted repentance unto life”. Held a Prayer Meeting afterwards at which we had many Penetants crying for mercy, “Glory be to God! This is delightful work. O for a shower!

Wed: 14 – Good time this Evening from “But know that the Lord hath set apart him that is godly for himself”. The regatta season, my object was warn & caution our People against the world’s alluring snare.

Sunday 18 – Preached this Morning from “Whose heart the Lord opened so that she attended to the things spoken by Paul”. Found it a very profitable season. In the Evening I spoke with pretty good freedom from “The common salvation”. The congregations were good and deeply attentive.

Sunday 25 – Xtmaz Day. Left home yesterday morning early, rode to Carrick & met the little Class for Tickets. Precious season. Road up to Wesleydale full forty Miles & Preached. Met the Class for Tickets at nine. Preached at ten & Baptized a child. Preached at Mr. Oakden’s Farm at two. Rode down to Westbury – more than twenty Miles. Preached with good freedom from “And the word was made flesh & dwelt among us &c. Baptized a Child, and then administered the Sacrament to the little Society. Seldom have I spent a more profitable Sabbath Evening – O may the labour of this day be followed by the special blessing of Heaven! Amen.

[Page 243]

Decr. 1842

Saturday 31 – By the mercy & goodness of my Heavenly Father I am brought to the close of another eventful year – a year of Mercy & loving kindness unto me, but Alas! a year of much unfaithfulness on my part.

It is now pleasing our God to afflict us as a family in the person of our little Edwin James, our younger Child. Nearly a month has elapsed since he was taken with Diarrhoea, and he hitherto has baffled all the medical skill. I fear he is marked as a victim for Death, but we are trying to say “Father thy will be done”.

We closed the year in our accustomed way by holding a Watchnight. The Rev: Mr. Price Independent Preached for us a solemn & profitable Sermon from “And at Midnight there was a cry made behold the Bridegroom cometh go ye out to meet him”.

Mr. Denny one of our Local Preachers followed by a very appropriate Prayer and address. I then made some few observations and closed the year in solemn silence upon our knees – and all I believe felt it to be a solemn midnight hour.

The funeral knell of 1842 having sounded we rose and sung “Come let us Arise our journey pursue &c”. We all felt it was good to be here because God was eminently in our Midst. O that this solemn Midnight scene may not soon be forgotten! Amen, Amen.

[Page 244]

1843

January 1st – Sunday. A deeply interesting Day. Preached in the morning from “Beloved I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper & be in health even as thy soul prospereth”. In the Evening I Preached a Covenant Sermon from “I beseech you Brethren by the Mercies of God that ye present your Bodies a living sacrifice &c”. The Congregation was good & deeply attentive, the word appeared to carry conviction to the hearts & consciences of the people.

After the Public Service was concluded I read the usual form of Covenant to the society, into the spirit of which all appeared with myself sincerely & devoutly to enter. We closed this our solemn Covenant Engagement with our God by the Sacrament of

the Lord's Supper. A more solemn & deeply interesting service I have not for a long time attended. To me & to most present the Covenant Blood was doubtless applied. O may we keep our Covenant vows unbroken that we may be found of him in peace at the last without spot & blameless!

Monday 2nd – Very poorly today. Much exhausted with the services of yesterday after the close of which had a painful attack of Bowell affliction which has left me very feeble today. Yet blessed be God I am rejoicing in the blessed influence imparted to my mind yesterday.

Met Mrs. Turner's Class this afternoon, and found it good to be there. In the Evening held our Quarterly Lovefeast – some very pleasing & important testimonies were borne to the power of divine grace by several who had been certainly amongst the Chief of sinners. Theirs was indeed a horrible Pit into which they had been plunged by transgression but the grace of God has brought them up.

Was stirred up to remember some of my first convictions and the way in which the Lord led me in my youngest days and could not but exclaim "O to grace how great a debtor!"

[Page 245]

1843

January

Tuesday 3rd – Quarterly Meeting, but which to me was rendered a somewhat gloomy melancholy one from the painful discovery that our dear little Boy had evidently changed for Death. This took place about ten in the morning, yet he lingered and was kept in life until a quarter before nine in the Evening, when without one struggle or sigh he sweetly breathed his last and winged his flight from Earth away to bloom immortal in the skies. Thus upon his dear Mother's lap in the presence of Dr. Grant, myself, our Daughter Ann, and another friend or two Died Edwin James Turner, aged Eight Months & three days, one of the fairest flowers that ever yet bloomed upon Earth. One of the loveliest Babes I ever saw but he has gone to join his Brothers in the Skies. Pleasing thought! Three Children before the Throne of God. We feel the stroke yet strive to bow to the will of God.

Thursday 5th – This Morning between Eight & Nine O'clock we committed to the silent Tomb the Remains of our dear little Boy. My dear Wife & eldest Daughter with four of our Boys, and four of our friends accompanied him to the New Cemetery. Brother Gaud conducted the service. Then his remains must return unto and mingle with the Dust until the Resurrection Morn when "New rising from the Tomb, with lustre brighter far shall shine, Revived with ever during bloom safe from diseases and decline".

The parting scene was affecting to us all, to his Mother and eldest sister especially. O may the sanctifying grace of God be given to us all that this bereavement may tend to the glory of God by leading us as a family to a more full conformity to the will of our Heavenly Father! I feel that "For us our Children sicken and for us they die". O Lord save me & mine forever!

[Page 246]

1843

Saturday, 7 – Thanks be to my God I am brought to the close of this first week in health and peace. It has been an eventful week to me & mine. I have indeed been called this week to weep with those that weep. Yet I hope these sympathies are

leading me nearer to my God. Lord help me to consecrate my poor self entirely unto thee! And O may all mine be thine forever!

Sunday, 8th – Longford – A pretty good Day. Preached this Morning from John's wish for Gains "That he might prosper and be in health, even as his Soul prospered". The congregation was small but very attentive, and the word seemed to be with Power. There is nothing like Soul Prosperity.

In the afternoon I attended & led a very excellent Prayer Meeting at Mountford. Here are Praying Souls indeed!

The Chapel was pretty well attended in the Evening and I was favoured with freedom in Preaching from "Then hath God also unto the Gentiles granted repentance unto life". O may the seed thus soon bring forth fruit unto God!

Saturday 14 – The weather has been exceedingly close & hot all week and my frame has felt a good deal from its oppressive influence. I have been enabled however to attend to my work generally pretty well and spoke with some little profit to the people. This has not as a whole been so good a week to my Soul as some former ones. I am too slothful. Lord quicken thou me according to thy word!

Sunday 15 – This was a barren heavy Day to my own feelings, nevertheless the people were deeply attentive and appeared to profit by the word Preached. My subject in the Morning was "Treasure hid in a field" – and in the Evening the "Lover of life unto life or death unto death". Solemn and awful subject!

Read the annual address of the Conference to the Society. Excellent Document, but there is cause of grief. Falling off in Nos. at home. Great distress among the poor.

[Page 247]

January – 1843

Sunday, 22nd – Longford – Good time this Morning from "Treasure hid in the field". Baptized Mr. Ball's infant Daughter – affecting season. Lord bless the Child! Preached in the Evening from "Whose heart the Lord opened so that she attended unto the things spoken by Paul" but was not free – Physically weak – Had spent my strength in visiting the sick in the afternoon. Weather hot.

Saturday 28 – Trying week! Weather excessively hot causing great languor. Trials with my family and in the Church. Several have been doing wrong which cause our hands to hang down. One of my old friends spoke unkindly to me which has caused me to feel much. But in God is my help!

Sunday 29 – A very barren depressing day to my own Mind. Hard work to Preach. Cornelius in the Morning, "A devout Man, one that found God within all his house, gave much Alms & Prayed Always". What a character for a Man who as yet knew not Jesus! But God will guide the sincere Soul aright! "Send for Peter!" In the Evening I Preached from "Resist the Devil & he will flee from you". While endeavouring to expose him and his dark designs, I found him busily at work endeavouring to resist me. Felt much ashamed & grieved before God and the People on account of my miserable performance.

February – Sat: 4 – Have met with some things this week of a painfully trying nature, but in others while visiting the People have been much encouraged. Thank God! I find my feeble efforts are not in vain, good in doing. Three Souls have just got into liberty and are rejoicing in God – and a few Backsliders are getting re-awakened. O may our gracious God arise and pour out his Spirit upon us! And then Prosperity will

crown our every effort!

[Page 248]

Sunday 5 – This was rather a barren Sabbath. The Congregations were thin, and I had hard work to Preach. In the Morning my subject was “Peter’s Vision” of four-footed Beasts &c and in the Evening “Abraham offering up his Son Isaac”. “O for a faith like his, that I the bright example may pursue.”

Thursday 9th – Arrived today in the Elizh. Jane our old friend Henry Reed Esq: with his family, and a number of Emigrants, several of whom are Members, and two Local Preachers. We met as old friends & fellow Labourers in the Kingdom & Patience of Jesus. Thanks be to God for bringing his Servants in health & safety and O may their coming amongst us be made an Everlasting blessing unto many.

Sunday, 12 – Ross & Campbell Town. Exchanged with Bro: Egglestone who Preached for me at Longford on behalf of the Tract Society. At Ross this morning had a very dull heavy season. No feeling, no energy among the people. It was like moving a mountain trying to excite some feeling in their breasts. Congregation very thin – Between thirty & forty. In the afternoon at Campbell Town there was very gracious feeling. The people have evidently something of vital religion amongst them. My subject was “For all the Promises of God in him are yea, & in him Amen, to the glory of God by us”. All felt. In the Evening we had a Prayer Meeting which was well attended – And there was a very gracious feeling throughout the Meeting – And I hope the gracious fruit thereof will be seen after many days.

[Page 249]

Feb: 1843

Wed. 15 – Heard Mr. Egglestone this Evening from “He that spared not his own Son &c”. An excellent Sermon – closely applied & well calculated to inform the Judgment and affect the heart. The room was full of people, and full of feeling. O ugly did unbelief appear, and how reasonable & important faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. How infinitely willing to bless & fully save!

Sunday, 19 – A pretty good day – Chapel well filled – good time in the Morning from “And we know that we are of God” – Good feeling. In the Evening I ventured upon that impt. text “What shall it profit a Man if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own Soul &c”? The Chapel was well filled and the solemn truths were listened to with solemn & devout attention. May the Eternal Spirit apply them with saving effect to the hearts of the people! Amen.

Sat: 25 – Thanks to my God for sparing me to the close of another week – A week of many. A week through which I have felt much of my own weakness Both of Body & Mind.

Preached at Harland Rise on Tuesday night & the Liffey on Thursday. At the latter place was very happy in my own mind while exhorting them “To Press towards the Mark &c”.

Sunday 26 – Longford – The poorest Congregations I have for a long time seen on account of the weather being so very wet. I Preached in the Morning from “This one thing I do, forgetting the things that are behind”, and in the Evening from “Abraham’s Offering up his Son Isaac” – was much interested & profited by the subject myself,

and hope the word was with power to others. "O for a faith like his, that I the bright example may pursue!"

[Page 250]

April: 1843

Sat. 1 – Thanks be to God my health has been better this week and my mind greatly strengthened in the Lord. My joy at times has been great in the Lord while engaged in my work. Preaching & giving tickets – Blessed be the Lord our God our people are rising in the tone of pious feeling & holy effort. Several have lately believed for & obtained "a clear heart" This is what glory to behold in all our numbers and he enabled to deliver for myself from day to day.

Sunday 2 – Longford & Caefry – a good day – the Lord was present in our ? and a shout of a King was in our midst – the Sacrament especially was so profitable season – All honour & praises to Jesus alone.

Tuesday 4th – Last night we held our quarterly Lovefeast. A very profitable meeting. The Lord is among us. Today we held our quarterly meeting which has been one of peace & Harmony, but not as spiritually profitable as some former ones – The watch night was well attended & thus was a pretty good influence.

Sunday 9 – Launceston – Good freedoms hath morning & evening especially the latter – In the evening the company was very large and deeply attentive while I urged the gracious expositation of Heaven – "Why will ye die?" at this prayer meeting afterwards several appeared under deep concern about their souls. O Jesus side ? !

Wed. 22nd – returned this evening from holding our district meeting in Hobart Town – Our meeting was one of great harmony and love – Never were seven brethren more united in affection than we in this district – not a ? string or unpleasant word with each other – and I trust the blessing of God we are all resolved to to be ? ? that we may be more useful – we had some very refreshing seasons together.

[Page 251]

May 13th – Since my last entry I have passed through some painful exercises of mind, and some affliction of body – One of our local brethren has been disgracing us in a most distressing manner, and another has been imbibing Doctrinal views which I fear will compel us to separate him from us - These things have distressed me much and others have grieved mine inmost soul and alas I I have not amidst my trials been looking to my God as I should have been Lord pardon the servant . On Wednesday evening I had a narrow escape of my life from the kicking of a horse we have just bought through which I was thrown out of the gig the wheel passing over me bruising my arm very much but from which I am fast recovering – O how kind & gracious is my God to me and {indecipherable} I might have been hurried into eternity in a moment. O may God to thee I offer praise! Help me in future so to live that I may be ready at thy call! Amen..

Sunday 14th – Preached this morning from "Beloved now are we the Sons of God etc" And in the evening from "The Podigal son" I was very weak in body but strength was given me according to my day and the word I hope was not without its saving effect upon the minds of the people. To God be praised in consequences of my injured arm was obliged to preach in a top coat, and have my arm in a sling.

Sunday 21 – Launceston – Good lesson this Mass from “ And every man that has this hope in him purifieth himself even as he is pure” In the evening I was spirit bound while speaking from that fine text “ Than hast ascended on high etc” – The compy was excellt and I hope my poor efforts were not without some good effect _ Lord with thee is that power!

[Page 252]

May -1843 –

Sunday 28 – Longford. Preached this morning from that interesting text from “ The Promise is to [several words –indecipherable]and in the evening from the following names” Them [indecipherable] that gladly received the Lord were baptized etc.This Congn in the morning was excellent, but in the evening it was thin. There was general influence resting upon us during both services yet alas, No visible fruit of conversion, no yielding up of the soul to God – Lord pass out thy spirit and let us again see signs and wonders wrought

Wed 31st – Monday & yesterday were days of much interest to me, arising principally from the happy state of mind of little Wm Bartley, a boy of 11years of age, Son of our excellent Brother Theodore Bartley boy of Bessy Lodge – the child has been for some time afflicted, and very patient in his suffering, but I had not been aware of real change of heart having taken place until Monday afternoon when I found him in great bodily suffering yet rejoicing in the hope & [indecipherable] of soon being with the Lord- Some of his sayings were truly affecting – often exclaiming “ Come Lord Jesus, come quickly “ – I shall soon be in Heaven etc” In this happy state I left him about noon yesterday when I proceeded to my appointment at [Indecipherable] where the Lord greatly helped me and deeply affected the minds of most present – My subject Math 9 “ the man sick of the palsy brought to Jesus to be healed.On my return home this morning I found my dear Young friend released from the burden of the flesh and escaped to the Mansion of bliss, for this I could not but rejoice and ffgive glory to God .

Another dispensation however had greatly afflicted my heart on my return home this morning I found my poor old friend Mr Alex C. Law dead in my study

[Page 253]

He had been in an ailing state for some time – about a fortnight ago he arrived here in a Govt vessel from the Leval Mines in Tasman`s Peninsula where he had acted as ?chist for the last two years. – I had frequently seen him, talked to him, prayed with him driven him out in my gig – The medical man had decided that his case was dropsy,but did not apprehend him as near to death and advised his return home by the vessel. I accompanied him on board and took my leave of him on Monday afternoon little expecting his end so near. –On Tuesday yesterday afternoon Dr Pugh was sent for on board (the vessel not having sailed) he having been taken much worse .He brought him on shore to my house when in eight hours afterwards he was a corpse.

His last hours were I believe very distressing owing from the nature of his complaint which forbade his poor mind exercising itself upon Eternal things or conversing with those who attended him. All we can do is hope Mercy Divine has saved him through the blood of atonement – While my dear wife was anxiously pressing him about his soul he said to her “ he was not affaid to die for God had for the sake of Jesus

forgiven him all his sins”

Yet to me this was so nothing in his death very monitory,, bidding me not to put off a full preparation for Death until the closing scenes – Lord prepare me ! It may this dispensation be sanctified to the good of my family & the church of God in this place! Amen

Friday June 2nd – Yesterday I interd the [indecipherable] if Mr Law and today those of dear Wm Law Bartley. Col Cumberland and Major Robinson who had known him at the mines both attended & several other respectable friends – “What is one life a vapour etc.!”

[Page 254]

June 1843

Sunday 4 - -Whitsuntide – Preached in the morning from “ For the promise is unto you & to your children etc” favoured with delightful freedom, and deep impression up to be made upon the cong at large –

Heard Mr R? in the afternoon at Margate St. Chapel with great profit. The chapel was full of people & feeling in the evening had a lage Congn and good subject but got somewhat bewildered – Text 2 Acts -411,42- still the people seemed deeply interested –Sacrament – Blessed time ! O for a mighty outpouring of the spirit.

Sunday 11 – Improved the Death of Willy Bartley this morning from Job 4-1,2- Had a large attendance most of whom were deeply affected – I scarcely ever read a more deeply interesting account than what was drawn up by his excellent father – O may this service be sanctified to the youth who more present! Amen

In the evening I preached from the “ Man sick of the palsy being brought to Jesus etc” and a good time Glory to God “ The son of man has still power upon Earth to forgive sins” Several have of late experienced this.

July 1st Saturday – Have been much engaged the last three weeks preaching, visiting & giving tickets and thanks be to God have been blessed in my deeds – The Lord has been with mine and good has been done _ The society is prospering and sinners are converted to God – To God alone be praised

Sunday 2 – Preached with freedom this morning from “ The Lord gave and the Lord hath take away etc” but I hope many amidst their present troubles were led more fully to see the necessity of submitting themselves to him without whom “the sparrow does not fall to the ground” In the evening preached from Philip [indecipherable] Jesus to this Ethiopean Eunich “Profitable times at the Sacrament – Thanks be to my God from such glorious privileges

[Page 255]

Sunday 9 – Praised be my God for another good Sabbath. Was favoured with good liberty in the Morning while Preaching to a large cong. from “For I know that my Redeemer liveth &c” and in the Evening again from “For we are the circumcision &c”. The word appeared to fall with power upon the people. O that the Spirit may be poured out from on high more copiously upon us that sinners may be converted.

Sunday 23 – Preached this Morning from an old favourite text “For the Lord God is a Sun & Shield &c”. The people were deeply attentive and I hope profited by the word.

In the Evening I had a large & deeply attentive audience to whom I spoke with freedom from "Turn again at my reproach; behold I will pour out my Spirit unto you &c". Some were surely awakened under the word!

August 6 – This Morning I look up the disobedient Prophet whom the Lion slew in the way – O how awfully monitory to Ministers of religion – Lord save me from unwatchfulness & disobedience to thy word!

In the Evening I was favoured with the presence of the Lord while urging "Simon son of Jonas lovest thou me &c". There was some deep searching of heart and afterwards "The Lord was made known unto us in the breaking of bread". To Jesus be everlasting praise!

September 4 – Had the privilege yesterday of hearing my two Brethren Gaud & Egglestone Preach our Sunday School Sermons. In the Morning Mr. Gaud gave us an admirable Sermon from "And that from a Child thou hast known the holy Scriptures &c". In the afternoon Mr. Egglestone addressed the Parents, Children & Teachers from "The words which I command thee shall be in thine heart &c" and in the Evening a noble Sermon from the "Value of the Soul". Held our Public Meeting this Evening, the best of the kind I have ever attended. Collections better than Thirty-two Pounds.

[Page 256]

September 1843

Wednesday 6 – Had an interview, by appointment, with our new Governor, Sir Eardly Wilmot who received me in the most courteous manner, and assured me of his best wishes for our welfare, and his intention to afford us all the help in his power. He told me that he was intimately acquainted with Dr. Bunting and several of our leading men in England, and that he had repeatedly taken the Chair at our Public Meeting at home &c &c. I feel thankful to find him so well disposed towards our cause, and hope the Lord will make him a blessing to the Colony.

Sat: 23 – Since the date of my last entry have been fully engaged in Preaching, giving Tickets, visiting the sick and while thus engaged the presence of the Lord has been with me and his blessing upon me. My labour has not been in vain the Lord. The society is increasing in number and growing in grace. All honor and glory to his name for condescending to employ & honor so unworthy a warrior!

Monday 25th ~~Oct. 2nd~~ – Was yesterday favoured in my feeble ministry with numerous congs. and a gracious influence from our God rested upon us. The Sacrament was a very gracious season. The Lord was with us.

This Evening we held our Quarterly Lovefeast which was well attended, and many bore a most noble and satisfactory testimony to the power of divine grace. I do not remember to have attended a Meeting of the kind more free from [indecipherable] of an objectionable kind and when God was more sincerely honoured. Who can sufficiently value the communion of Saints.

Tuesday 26th 3rd – Held our Local Preachers Meeting at ten, and the Quarterly Meeting in the afternoon. All was peace and harmony, and the Lord is blessing the circuit with Prosperity. In the Evening we had a very spirit stirring Watch Night. To Jesus be all the praise.

[Page 257]

October 1843

Saturday 14 – Returned today from Hobart Town where we met on the 5th Instant to hold a Special District Meeting in which we had a good deal of exercise of mind arising out of the subjects that came before us. We loved however as Brethren, and on all matters were of one heart and soul. On Monday 9th we had in Hobart Town a very excellent Missionary Meeting, one of the best I ever attended. While in the Town was far from being well, and felt much anxiety about my family - The Scarlet Fever being very prevalent; and many Children having died, but on my arrival at home could again sing “Better than my boding fears thou oft to me hast proved” – found all well save our youngest Child who has commenced with the Hooping Cough, which is shaking his tender frame very much.

December 5th. To the Lord only is known what my mind has passed through of late. Shortly after my return from the D. Meeting, The Triton arrived from the Islands bringing the painful intelligence of the Death of our two Brethren Cross & Cargill. The former finished his course with joy honouring his God with his expiring breath. The other alas! fell by his own hand, through taking Laudanum but his Brethren hope it was in a state of temporary insanity. The particulars they have though best to withhold. The case to me is awfully distressing and monitory. My God, My God save & keep me! Alas! what is man unsaved by his God! What is he not capable of doing? My soul mourns before the Lord on account of this sad catastrophe and is afflicted also for his wife and five Children. David Cargill was a man of superior talent, but the “Mighty is fallen”. Bro: Cross with whom I laboured for four years was a pious, Devoted and useful Missionary, a Man of one business. The Lord has taken him to his reward in a better world. He also has left a widow and five Children behind but the Lord will take care of and provide for them.

[Page 258]

December 1843

My children have been most of them afflicted with Scarlet Fever and some of them severely so that we have been concerned for their safety, but the Lord has mercifully removed the rod in a great measure from them, so that they are all convalescent save our youngest who is still suffering from the Hooping Cough rather severely, but while the Lord has been pleased thus to share the lives, and restore the health of my children, it has pleased him to lay his hand upon me. On Saturday night the 18th ultimo I was suddenly taken very ill with violent pain in the Head and Inflammation in the Throat. The remedies supplied were successful in removing the violence of the attack in the Head & Throat, but it was found to have seriously affected my Chest accompanied with a very painful cough threatening me with serious Pulmonary affection. Entire cessation from all public duties was at once imposed upon me, and a change of air recommended.

The week before last I spent several days at George Town on the Coast, but found the air too keen for me only increasing the irritation of the Chest. Last I spent with our very kind friends Mr. & Mrs. Ball at Mountford, and hope have improved a little thereby.

Yesterday I returned home to consult my Medical advisers, who pronounce me much improved, and express themselves with confidence as to my recovery providing I remain quiet. This has been a trial to my mind yet the Lord has I trust given me grace to sink into his will – That will I know to be good, however painful to flesh and blood.

Life appears desirable on account of my dear Children and affectionate wife, but there is a voice that says “Leave thy fatherless Children, I will keep them alive and let

thy widows trust in me" – Lord help thou me!

[Page 259]

Decr. 1843

Sat: 30 – Since the date of my last I have continued the Prisoner of the Lord but my health has gradually improved a little. On Sunday last I ventured to speak a little in the morning at Pattersons Plains from "wise & the foolish virgins" and afterwards met the class for Tickets. I felt very feeble in speaking yet thankful that I was enabled to recommence my work.

The Stations having arrived according to the arrangement of the D. Meeting, I came over to Hobart Town yesterday by Coach to meet the Brethren in order to determine what should be done with Brother Longbottom who is now left without a Station in consequence of Govt. having taken Port Arthur from us, and placed a Clergyman of the English Ch. there. Came up to New Norfolk today to see Bro: L. and spend the Sabbath with him.

Sunday 31 – At the urgent request of Bro: Longbottom I addressed the people this morning and though weak found it good to my own Soul to speak from "Comfort ye, comfort ye my people saith your God". In the Evening heard the Rev: Wm. Jarrett, Independent, who came up to New Norfolk on a visit, but my expectations were not realized. The Congregations were but small in comparison of ours in the Launceston Circuit – And alas! the people seem very wanting in Spiritually and energy of mind. I was disappointed at there being no Watchnight, but there was no mention made of it by – and I was not equal to rendering any assistance myself.

Thus has closed another eventful year – a year of some trial, and of great Mercy to me but alas what poor returns have I made to my indulgent Lord. I have need to cry "God be merciful unto me a sinner" and "Pardon me in iniquity for it is great". Still, thanks be to God I have an interest in the Covenant Blood – Yes for "Me the Saviour died".

[Page 260]

Journal for 1844

Teusday 2nd – Held a special D. Meeting in Hobart Town at which it was determined that Bro: Longbottom should proceed to the New South Wales District, Bro: McKenny being in want of men and having the means of supporting them independently of the Society's funds. We are sorry thus to weaken our hands in this Colony, but believe this plan will best subserve the general interest of our Zion, Bro: L. having been superseded in his Station at Port Arthur by the appointment of a Clergyman of England to that place.

Wed: 3. Returned home to Launceston by Coach and was very tired with the journey but thankful to find my family in better health than I left them, save one and my own health has improved by the journey.

Sunday 7 – Heard Bro: Gaud & was greatly profited by the word. Assisted in administering the Sacrament, and found it a profitable season to my Soul – The Covenant was very solemn.

Monday 8 – Held the Quarterly Lovefeast this Evening and a more Spiritual soul melting Meeting I have not for a long time attended. Many clear & affecting testimonies were bourne to the truth & grace of the Lord Jesus.

Teus: 9 – Held our Quarterly Meeting at which I and my Colleague were greatly tired. The spirit of a few was very different to what we had expected and deserved but the Lord is Judge, and the cause I leave with him. In the Evening we had a profitable watch night well attended, and a gracious influence was felt amongst us.

Sat: 13 - Have been very busy this week in packing and preparing for our removal to New Norfolk next week. Have had a good deal of painful anxiety of mind as well as fatigue of Body. Our system of change is painfully felt on such occasions as these. May I be ready for the last great change of all when Farewells are no more!

[Page 261]

Monday 14 – Bade Launceston & friends therein Farewell this morning, accompanied by my two youngest Boys in the Gig, leaving Mrs. Turner and the other Children to follow in the Coach on Wednesday. Felt the parting with so many endeared friends, but believe the change will be for my good, so far as my Physical strength is concerned. By sun down we arrived in safety at Summercotes and were kindly received & hospitably entertained by our long tried friends Captain & Mrs. Horton.

Wed. 16 – Came to Mr. Spekes of Constitution Hill, and came down this Evening to Bridge Water Hotel where Mrs. Turner & the Children arrived safe & well about eight O'clock but very tired having been travelling since before five this Morning. Felt very thankfully to our Heavenly Father for bringing us in safety thus far on our Journey.

Thursday 17 – After a good nights rest we all came up by the Coach & Gig to New Norfolk the place of our destination and about twelve O'clock entered our new Habitation, but Alas! no warm hearted members were waiting to receive, for here society we have none. Mr. Hall the School Master, a pious Independent came to bid us welcome and offer any assistance we might require – for this kindness we felt thankful.

Friday 18 – Drove Mrs. Turner down to Hobart Town to see Bro: & Sister Simpson before they leave for Launceston & Bro: & Sister Longbottom before they embark for New South Wales. Our old friends in Hobart Town all received us with a hearty welcome, and Mrs. Turner especially felt quite refreshed in spirit, proving that "As iron sharpeneth iron, so does the countenance of a man his friend – Saturday 19 – Returned home to prepare for the work and rest of the Sabbath.

[Page 262]

March 1844

Friday 1 – Six weeks have now passed away since I arrived in this place, during which time I have been endeavouring in a feeble way to make myself useful to the people of my charge – And while I find much very much to discourage and cast a gloom over the Mind, still am not without hope my endeavours will not be without some success. Have commenced a Class on the Friday Evening in my own House, and at each of our Meetings a gracious influence has been vouchsafed. Once I have been up to the River Ouse and was encouraged by my visit, and tomorrow I set off to visit that place & neighbourhood again. My health is becoming pretty well established again so that I have hope of labouring a little longer in the vineyard of my Lord. O for a loving, grateful & obedient heart to him from whom all my mercies flow!

April 3rd – Returned from Campbell Town where we have last week held a special D. Meeting at the urgent request of Bro: Simpson arising out of the Death of his wife. The Lord having been pleased to take his Partner from him, leaving him with five Children, the eldest not thirteen years old, and not being able to meet with any suitable person in the colony to take care of them, we have yielded to his earnest solicitations, and consented to his going home. This in some respects will be a great trial in weakening our hands in this small District, yet I hope it will prove a providential step.

We have arranged for Mr. Butters to take his place in Launceston, and Bro: Manton and I to work New Norfolk and Hobart Town between us. This I believe we shall be able to accomplish if favoured with health, and by so doing save the Funds the expense of one family; which circumstances greatly reconciled my mind to our Brothers taking his family home.

[Page 263]

April 1844

Visited Launceston in company with Bro: Manton but the weather was so exceedingly unfavourable that we could not get out among the friends & enjoy our visit much. The Journey has been very beneficial to my health, and on my return found my family all well. To my heavenly Father be all the praise!

Sunday 7 – Easter Sunday – Preached on account of the Sunday Schools in Hobart Town today – Morning at Davey Street but owing to having taken cold in returning from the OBrien's Bridge Missy. Meeting on Friday Evening I had very great difficulty in getting through the Evening Service – Never did I before feel so exhausted by Preaching, and never did my Spirits so sink as after these feeble efforts. I was ready to conclude my labours at an end. The enemy also thrust sorely at my Soul – But the Lord sustained me.

May 6 – During the last Month have been endeavouring in various ways to lay out myself for usefulness in poor, dark, dead place, and blessed be God my prospects are brightening a little. We have an increase of hearers, and there is some feeling beginning to be manifested in our Assemblies. Three fresh ones have cast in their lot with us. Blessed be the Lord my health is gradually improving and my family are all favoured with this great blessing.

June 13 – Returned today from a visit to Hobart Town wither Mrs. T. accompanied to take our leave of Bro: Simpson and his Children. They sail on Saturday next in the Amwell, Captain Keikers for London. May the God of the Seas go with them, and give them a safe & speedy passage to the land of our Fathers. We felt the parting scene. Our Mission in him loses its best Preacher though not its most useful Man. Poor Man, his prospect is not the most cheering. Lord direct him in the right way.

[Page 264]

1846

June 26 – More than two years have elapsed since I made an entry into my Journal before. This I now deeply regret and confess with sorrow my negligence and carelessness in this matter. Many have been the mercies of my God to me which ought to have been recorded, and several have been the changes among us in the District which I should now rejoice to have a record.

New Norfolk continues in a very low state of Morals & Religions – Our Society is still very small, and the congregations by no means encouraging.

The Back River Congregations have been in general very encouraging, weather permitting, and the tone of morals and feeling in the Services have decidedly improved, but the Society has not increased in number.

The Sabbath School there, of which my eldest Daughter has charge, is in a very efficient state, numbering between Sixty & Seventy in attendance. This School promises to be a great blessing to the rising race.

Our School on the Township also has much improved of late, furnishing my wife and second Daughter with considerable encouragement.

The mercy of God was greatly magnified to us as a family in the preservation of my dear wife from Death by burning on the 26th of March last. On that Evening, after I and all my family (save Mrs. Turner & the two youngest Children) had gone to the chapel, to the Thursday Evening Service, The Servant woman accidentally set on fire a large Basket of foul Linen on the landing of the Staircase. On giving the Alarm Mrs. Turner hastened up to see what was the matter when she became suddenly enveloped in the flames. The two little children came screaming up to the

[Page 265]

Chapel to bring us down to the rescue of their Mother. We found her extricated from the imminent fire but seriously burned on the Face, neck & Hands. The fire was soon got under and no great loss sustained by the articles consumed. But the injury sustained by the poor Sufferer was found much greater than was first apprehended. Doctor Weston, our Medical attendant was immediately called in, who applied Spirit of Turpentine alone for the first twenty four hours. This occasioned great pain to the Sufferer, but produced the desired effect, in soon healing the wounds that had been made. But alas! The effect of the shock upon the nerves remains to this day. I cannot but record the surprising fact ~~statement~~ that although the face was nearly burned all over, and both ears all covered with Blister under the Cap, & the hair singed, the Cap was not burned at all - Also the Neck all round, down upon the Chest under the Habit Shirt, the skin was entirely destroyed, yet the habit Shirt was not all burned – That her Person should have sustained so much injury, without the Garments igniting is to me matter of astonishment & Praise. Had her Garments taken fire from the circumstances in which she was placed, humanly speaking, life must have been destroyed. To my God alone the Deliverance & Praise must be ascribed.

Oh! that my heart even more tender soft, and grateful to the Lord for his mercy to me and mine in thus saving us from overwhelming grief.

I regret that this dispensation has not been more fully sanctified to us as a family! Lord Pardon my ingratitude, and give me thy sanctifying Spirit.

[Page 266]

Another circumstance which has painfully affected my mind of late, has been the painful affliction of Mr. Manton, my Fellow Labourer of Hobart Town, which has threatened to lay him aside entirely from his work for more than two months. I have had to take charge of his circuit as well as my own. Many fears have been entertained & expres'd for his safety, but blessed be the Lord his health is becoming restored so far as to enable him to recommence his work.

Great changes are taking place amongst us Methodistically in these Colony. All have been united into one District, under one Chairman and General Superintendant, Mr. W.B. Boyer, lately arrived from England. In consequence of this I have to proceed shortly to Sydney to attend the District Meeting there, after which changes are expected to take place which may affect our interest greatly. Upon these subjects

my mind is at times greatly exercised. O may my God who has led me, and guided me all my days direct my steps aright in this matter also!

I have been encouraged for the last few days in witnessing the power of divine grace in an aged Female, Mrs. Franklin, who is a member with us. She has been visited by a most painful affliction, which threatened immediate Death, but her God has been with her enabling her not only to submit, but to triumph in the grace of her Saviour, "Glorifying him in the fiery furnace". To him be all the praise.

[Page 267]

August 1846 – Great changes are taking place amongst us in these Colonies. The Rev: Wm. B. Boyer has arrived in Sydney as Genl. Supt. of our Colonial Missions in Australia and Chairman of the District. I have received Letters from him, informing me of some of his projected plans for the more effectual carrying on of our work. Among others, he wishes me to prepare for ime. taking charge of the Sydney Circuit – Necessity arguing that Mr. Draper should as soon as practicable go as Superintendant to Adelaide S. Australia.

While my Judgt. approved of this proposal, it proved in some respects a sore trial especially to my Mrs. Turner, who is in a very weakly state, esp. in her nervous system, from the terrible shock thereof received in our late accident by fire.

Having held a special District Meetg. with my Brethren, preparatory to my removal and made all other necessary arrangements, we took our leave of the few sincere and warmhearted friends in New Norfolk and early in September embarked at Hobart Town on Board the Lord Auckland for Sydney.

Arrangements had been made for my holding a farewell service with our old and highly esteemed friends in Hobart Town – many attended and our farewell greetings were such as not soon to be forgotten.

[Page 268]

This removal from Van Diemens land was in several respects very painful to my dear wife. After our labours and trials among the Heathen, she hoped we should spent the remnant of our days in this Colony to which we were both strongly attached. But the greatest trial was the leaving our two eldest sons behind. They were both placed in good & honourable positions in two of the Colonial Banks, and could not without serious risk to their injury be removed.

Our accommodations on board the Lord Auckland were good and the voyage most pleasant. The Rev: Joseph & Mrs. Beazly, Independants, were our fellow voyagers. Our intercourse with each other was sweet and the religious services we held together were very profitable I believe to all. Some of the Officers expres'd their regret that the voyage was so soon brought to a close.

We anchored in the Sydney Harbour on Sat. Morning, third week in Sept. - My predecessor, Mr. Draper, having already sailed for Adelaide. The old Mission House in Princes Street, was ready for our reception – and in a few hours I had the happiness of seeing my good wife and nine Children safely domiciled in their new home.

My Colleague the Rev: S. Wilkinson and his excellent wife gave us a hearty reception and the friends generally manifested pleasure on our arrival amongst them. The

[Page 269]

Genl. Supt. Mr. Boyer called upon us in the Afternoon, and manifested a very kind and brotherly Spirit. Not only did we receive a hearty welcome from the Members of our Church in general, but several of the leading friends in the Independent Church manifested a most kind & liberal Spirit inviting us to their houses &c &c. This soon

gave us the feeling of being at home among our new friends.

On the first Sabbath Morning I heard my old friend Mr. Schofield preach a profitable Sermon from "Why art thou cast down, O my Soul &c" – And in the Evening I opened my Commission in York St. from "Who will have all men to be saved & come unto the knowledge of the truth". The Congn. was very large & attentive, but I did not feel at home in my work.

I was happy to find our cause in an encouraging state throughout the Circuit generally. A new Chapel had recently opened in Hay Street – A small Chapel in the course of erection at Balmain. The old parent Chapel in Princes St. was being enlarged and improved – and within a few weeks after our arrival we laid the Foundation Stone of two more chapels, one at Surry Hills, the other at Chippendale – both in rapidly rising localities, where we had a small cause and greatly needed more accommodation.

The contrast between quiet New Norfolk my former residence and the noise and bustle of ~~this to me, great City~~ & Sydney is great.

[Page 270]

The Plan of labor in this Circuit was more than any two Men could properly execute; and though comparatively yet strong to labor, I found the wear & tare of this Circuit would be more than I could well sustain – Besides the care & labor of the Circuit I found the charge of our Book Depot a burden I could not have sustained but for the assistance rendered by one of my sons.

[Page 271]

Rev Mr, Mrs. & Miss Turner

Lady Bowen at Home
the 15th of Augt. at 8 o'Clock
Private [indecipherable]
H.O.P.

[Page 272]

[indecipherable]

[Transcribed by June Pettit, Judy Gimbert]